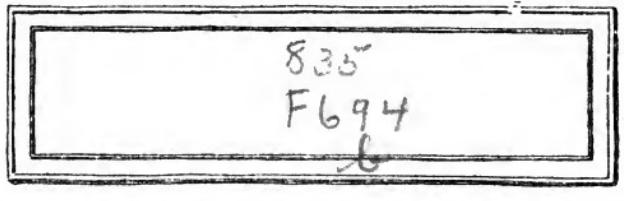
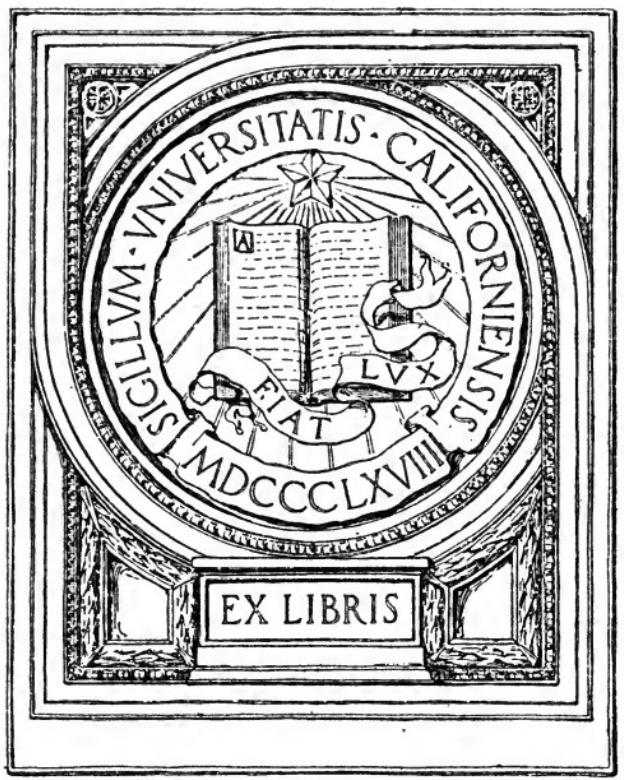


СЕВЕРНЫЙ РУССКИЙ КНИГА  
NORTH RUSSIAN BOOK

UC-NRLF



SB 323 565



$\ell'$  - current  
 $\ell = \text{all}$

97 den

Dr. Wise

I sent a ms

— 1 —

14-<sup>th</sup> Feb 1968

7 <sup>very</sup> ~~the~~

25-7 ~~and~~  
27 ~~for~~ - 10

25-  
77 <sup>and</sup> alone  
alone

56 adur.

68

*adjective* *adverb*

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

# **FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK**

*BY THE SAME AUTHOR*

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR. 6s. net.

SECOND RUSSIAN BOOK. In preparation.

THIRD RUSSIAN BOOK. In preparation.

THE BALKANS AND TURKEY: The History of the Balkan States and the Turkish Empire. By NEVILL FORBES, D. G. HOGARTH, D. MITRANY, and ARNOLD TOYNBEE. With maps. In the press.

*OTHER BOOKS*

A FIRST RUSSIAN READER, from L. N. TOISTOV. With English Notes and a Vocabulary by PERCY DEARMER and V. A. TANANÉVICH.

A SHORT HISTORY OF RUSSIA. By LUCY CAZALET. 2s.

# FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK

BY

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES  
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD



OXFORD  
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
1915

SERVATION  
Y ADDED  
INAL TO BE  
AINED

27 1994

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK  
TORONTO MELBOURNE BOMBAY  
HUMPHREY MILFORD M.A.  
PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

PG211  
F 692  
1915  
MAIN

## PREFACE

THIS book is intended as a practical means of acquainting the student of Russian with the first difficulties of the language, which are the case-endings. Without a knowledge of these no real progress can be made. In order that the process of their acquisition may be as palatable as possible many words and phrases of immediate utility have been inserted. Virtually no verbs are dealt with in this volume, as a great deal can be said in Russian without any verbs at all. The only one given in this book in full is the verb *to be*; the terrors of the Russian verb are reserved for the Second Book. Where practicable the Russian words have been printed also transliterated in English characters to give some idea of pronunciation. When using the book the table of contents should be carefully read.

N. F.

OXFORD, September 1915.

# CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
1. The Alphabet . . . . .	1
2. Pronunciation . . . . .	2
3. Indeclinable words . . . . .	10
4. Easy phrases without verbs . . . . .	13
5. A few useful Adverbs . . . . .	17
6. Words with masculine and feminine endings . . . . .	20
7. Continuation of two previous chapters . . . . .	24
8. The Verb <i>to be</i> (быть) . . . . .	27
9. The Nominative: Substantives . . . . .	31
10. Vocabulary: Outside and inside of buildings, rooms, furniture, &c. . . . .	38
11. Vocabulary: Travel . . . . .	43
12. Vocabulary: Time, weather, &c. . . . .	46
13. Vocabulary: The points of the compass, names of countries, nationalities, towns, rivers, and Christian, patronymic, and surnames. The use of personal names in Russian . . . . .	48
14. The Nominative: Pronouns . . . . .	55
15. Vocabulary of words denoting male and female beings . . . . .	57
16. Examples of Pronouns used in agreement with Nouns . . . . .	62
17. The Nominative: Adjectives . . . . .	70
18. Examples of Adjectives used in agreement with Nouns . . . . .	72
19. Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting size, shape, and position . . . . .	73
20. Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting appearance and quality . . . . .	75
21. Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting colour and age . . . . .	77
22. Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting nationality; Adjectives as Surnames and Nouns . . . . .	79
23. The two forms of the Adjective . . . . .	80
24. Pronouns like Adjectives, <i>which</i> , &c. . . . .	82
25. The Genitive: Substantives . . . . .	89

## CONTENTS

vii

CHAPTER	PAGE
26. The Genitive : Pronouns . . . . .	96
27. The Genitive : Adjectives . . . . .	99
28. Vocabulary : Literature, music, theatre, &c. . . . .	100
29. Phrases containing words in the Genitive . . . . .	102
30. <i>His, her, and their</i> . . . . .	105
31. Vocabulary : Food, drink, &c. . . . .	106
32. The Genitive in Negations . . . . .	109
33. The Genitive of Quantity (food, &c.) . . . . .	111
34. Use of the Nominative and Genitive after Numbers . . . . .	114
35. The Genitive of Time . . . . .	119
36. The Genitive of Date . . . . .	121
37. The Genitive of Comparison . . . . .	122
38. Vocabulary : The human body, health . . . . .	129
39. Vocabulary : Animal and plant life . . . . .	131
40. The Verb <i>to have</i> . . . . .	134
41. <i>Not to have</i> . . . . .	139
42. <i>To have</i> : Past and future . . . . .	140
43. Prepositions with the Genitive : <i>in the possession of, without, for, until, out of, away from, near, after, except, instead of, alongside of</i> (у, безъ, для, до, изъ, отъ, боколо, послѣ, кромѣ, вмѣсто, вблизѣ)	142
44. The Dative : Substantives . . . . .	147
45. The Dative : Pronouns . . . . .	151
46. The Dative : Adjectives . . . . .	153
47. Phrases with words in the Dative ; wants and requests, addressing letters . . . . .	154
48. Vocabulary : Clothes . . . . .	159
49. Age . . . . .	161
50. Prepositions with the Dative : <i>to, along, according to, at the rate of</i> (къ, по)	162
51. The Accusative : Substantives, Pronouns, and Adjectives . . . . .	164
52. Phrases with words in the Accusative . . . . .	166
53. Prepositions with the Accusative : <i>into, to, on to, for, at the rate of, through, across</i> (въ, на, за, по, черезъ)	167
54. The Instrumental : Substantives . . . . .	171
55. The Instrumental : Pronouns . . . . .	177

CHAPTER	PAGE
56. The Instrumental: Adjectives . . . . .	178
57. Uses of the Instrumental: Agent, instrument, predicate, time, season . . . . .	179
58. Prepositions with the Instrumental: <i>behind, for, under,</i> <i>above, before, in front of, between, from</i> (за, подъ, надъ, п̄едъ, м̄ежду, съ) . . . . .	181
59. The Locative: Substantives . . . . .	185
60. The Locative: Pronouns . . . . .	190
61. The Locative: Adjectives . . . . .	192
62. The Locative and the Prepositions: <i>in, on, about, in</i> <i>presence of, after</i> (въ, на, о, при, по) . . . . .	193
<b>INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES</b> . . . . .	<b>200</b>
<b>SUBJECT INDEX</b> . . . . .	<b>216</b>

*NOTE ON THE ACCENT*

*In Russian the accent is mobile; it can fall on any syllable of a word, and in the case of declinable words it can fall on various syllables according to the different cases, either on the termination or on one of the syllables of the stem. Some words identical in appearance are totally different in meaning, and this difference is only expressed by the accent. The rules which govern its incidence are, however, so intricate that the beginner is recommended to learn by ear or by observation where the accent falls on the commonest cases of the commonest words. In this book the accent is marked throughout.*

# CHAPTER 1

## THE ALPHABET

NAME	VALUE	NAME	VALUE
А а	а	а	a
Б б	бे	б	b
В в	ве	v	v
Г г	ге	g	g
Д д	де	d	d
Е е	е	ye	ye
Ж ж	же	zh	zh
З з	зе	z	z
И и	i	yi	yi
І і <sup>1</sup>			
Й ѹ <sup>2</sup>		i	i
К к	ка	k	k
Л л	эль	l	l
М м	эмъ	m	m
Н н	энъ	n	n
О о	о	o	o
П п	пе	p	p
Р р	эръ	r	r
С с	есъ	s	s
Т т	те	t	t
У у	у	u	u
Ф ф	эфъ	f	f
Х х	ха	(k)h	(k)h
Ц ц	це	ts	ts
Ч ч	че	ch	ch
Ш ш	ша	sh	sh
Щ щ	ща	shch	shch
Ђ ъ	еръ	cf. p. 6	cf. p. 6
Ѝ ў	еры	y	y
Ӗ ъ	еръ	cf. p. 6	cf. p. 6
Ҫ ѿ <sup>3</sup>	ять	ye	ye
Ӭ ѿ <sup>4</sup>	э	e	e
Ѡ ю	ю	yu	yu
Ѩ я	я	ya	ya
Ѳ ѡ	өитâ	f	f
Ѷ в	йжица	i	i

<sup>1</sup> Called и съ тóчкой = *i with a dot.*

<sup>2</sup> Called и съ краткой = *i with a short quantity.*

<sup>3</sup> Has exactly the same value as e, but is of different origin.

<sup>4</sup> Called э оборóтное = *e reversed.*

**General Observation**

а ә ы օ ү      are called hard vowels,  
     ъ                  is called the hard sign,

я ے (ѣ) ԝ [ë]<sup>1</sup> ю      are called soft vowels,  
     ъ                  is called the soft sign.

б վ گ դ ժ զ      are called voiced consonants,  
پ ֆ (Փ) կ տ շ ս  
and ҳ ց չ թ      are called voiceless consonants.

**CHAPTER 2****PRONUNCIATION****The Vowels**

A a like *a* in *car*

мáтушка (*mother*)    m átushka

Я я like *ya* in *yard*

тамóжня (*custom-house*)    tamózhnya

OBS. 1. а and я when followed by a consonant +ъ are, more especially when accented, pronounced almost like *ai* in *Cairo* (transliterated a<sup>i</sup>) :

царь (*tsar*)    tsá'ır'

OBS. 2. я when unaccented and preceding the stress often sounds almost like *ye*, or *yi*, or even *e* or *i*:

пятьдесáть (*fifty*)    pidyesyát

<sup>1</sup> ё = *yo*, cf. note on p. 5.

Ә ә like *e* in *ell*

этáжъ (*story, sc. of a house*) etázh

Obs. When accented the pronunciation of ә depends on what letters follow it.

(1) If followed by a consonant + hard vowel or ъ it is pronounced almost

like *ai* in *air* (transliterated e<sup>a</sup>)

эта (*this, f.*) éta

(2) If followed by a consonant + soft vowel it is pronounced

like *a* in *ale* (transliterated e<sup>i</sup>)

эти (*these*) éti

Е е like *ye* in *yell*

(Е ё)

Екатерíна (*Catherine*) yekatyerína

гнёздó (*nest*) gnyezdó

Obs. When accented the pronunciation of е depends on what letters follow it.

(1) If followed by a consonant + hard vowel or ъ it is pronounced almost like *yai* in *yair* (i.e. the English word *air* preceded by the *y*-sound; transliterated ye<sup>a</sup>)

газéта (*newspaper*) gazyéta

колéно (*knee*) kalyéna

(2) If followed by a consonant + soft vowel or ь it is pronounced

like *ya* in *Yale* (transliterated ye<sup>i</sup>)

есть (*there is*) yé'st'

здесь (*here*) zdyé's'

Ыы like *y* in *Whitby*  
былá (*she was*) bylá

И и like *ye* in *yield*

(Й й)  
дитя (child) dyityá

Obs. 1. й (transliterated i) is only used when this letter forms the second half of a diphthong :

мой (*my*, m.) moi

After ы and і (ый, ій = y, i) where it is not audible, it is not transliterated.

Obs. 2. i (transliterated i) is only used when this letter is followed by a vowel<sup>1</sup>:

Англія (England) англія

Obs. 3. v is only used in a few ecclesiastical words of Greek origin and sounds like и.

OBS. 4. *y* = я almost always comes between two consonants; in those few cases where it is followed by a vowel, a hyphen is inserted to show that it does not belong to the following vowel *e* (*ye*) or *я* (*ya*), cf. pp. 70, 71.

<sup>1</sup> Except in the word *миръ* = *world*, spelt thus to differentiate it from *миръ* = *peace*.

O o (1) when accented  
like *o* in *or*

móre (*sea*) mórye

(2) when unaccented and before the accent  
like *a* in *car*

молокó (*milk*) malakó

(3) when unaccented and after the accent  
like *a* in *paternal*

йблоко (*apple*) yáblaka

Obs. When followed by a consonant + ь, more especially  
when it is accented, o is pronounced almost  
like *oi* in *soil* (transliterated o<sup>i</sup>)  
соль (*salt*) sól'

[Ё ё] like *yo* in *yore*

озёпа (*lakes*) azyóra

Obs. This is not counted a separate letter in Russian,  
hence the brackets ; the diaeresis (‘), seldom  
marked in Russian books, implies the accent, as  
this sound never occurs in unaccented syllables.

Ү y like *u* in *push*

ўтка (*duck*) útka

Ю ю like *yu* in *yule*

ключъ (*key*) klyuch

Ч ъ has no sound and merely indicates that the preceding consonant is hard :

поль (*floor*) pol

OBS. This is called the hard sign ; it occurs also in the middle of words made up of a preposition ending in a consonant and a root beginning with a vowel, but never has any sound :

подъѣздъ (*front door*) padyéazd

҃ ъ indicates that the preceding consonant is soft :

соль (*salt*) sóil'

OBS. This is called the soft sign ; it occurs also in the middle of words where a consonant has to be softened :

мáльчикъ (*boy*) máil'chik

In such cases and at the end of words it is transliterated by a comma at the top right hand of the consonant which is softened.

### The Consonants

Б б like b in English, but at the end of words almost like p :

лобъ (*forehead*) lop

П п like p in English.

В в like v in English, but at the end of words almost like f :

Киевъ (*Kiev*) kíyef

Φ φ }    like *f* in English.  
 Θ θ }

Г г    like *g* in *good*, but at the end of words almost like *k* :  
 лугъ (*meadow*) luk.

OBS. 1. In the word Богъ (*God*) it is pronounced like  
 x, i.e. *kh*; also before κ :

легкó (*it is easy*) lyekhkó

OBS. 2. Before д (*d*) it is pronounced like *gh*<sup>1</sup> :  
 гдѣ (*where*) ghdyé

К κ    like *k* in English.

OBS. Before τ (*t*) it is pronounced like x (i.e. *kh*) :  
 кто (*who*) khto

Х χ    like *kh* in (Scotch) *loch*; at the beginning of words  
 more like English *h* :

хорошó (*all right*) (k)harashó

Д δ    like *d* in English, but at the end of words almost  
 like *t*<sup>2</sup> :

годъ (*year*) got

Т τ    like *t* in English.

З з    like *z* in English, but at the end of words almost  
 like *s* :

разъ (*a stroke, a time*) ras

С с    like *s* in *so*.

Ж ж    like *s* in *measure* (transliterated *zh*) :  
 мужъ (*husband*) muzh

Ш ш    like *sh* in English.

Ц ц    like *ts* in English.

<sup>1</sup> This is the voiced sound corresponding to the voiceless *kh*.

<sup>2</sup> Except when followed by ь or preceded by з (*z*) and ж (*zh*).

Ч ч like *ch* in English (N.B. note on p. 13).

Щ щ like *shch* in *Ashchurch*.

М м like *m* in English.

Н н like *n* in English.

Л л like *l* in English.

Р р like *r* in Scots (i.e. rolled).

OBS. Voiced consonants immediately preceding voiceless consonants become voiceless :

всё (*everything*) фsyó

### General observations on Pronunciation

#### 1. The consonants

Л Н Т Д

are especially affected by the quality of the following vowel or sign :

Hard л лобъ (*forehead*) лоп (l = ll in *ell*)

Soft л лёдъ (*ice*) лyot (l as in *lewd*)

Hard л полъ (*floor*) pol (l = ll in *ell*)

Soft л соль (*salt*) sóil' (l' as in *lewd*)

Hard н носъ (*nose*) nos

Soft н нéбо (*sky*) nyé<sup>a</sup>ba (n as in *new*)

Hard н бáрáнь (*sheep*) barán

Soft н конь (*steed*) kó<sup>i</sup>n' (n' as in *new*)

Hard т томъ (*volume*) tom

Soft т тъло (*body*) tyé<sup>a</sup>la (t as in *tune*)

Hard т ротъ (*mouth*) rot

Soft т слáкотъ (*slush*) slyákat' (t' as in *tune*)

Hard д домъ (*house*) dom

Soft д день (*day*) dyé<sup>i</sup>n' (d as in *due*)

Hard д мёдъ (*honey*) myot

Soft д дождъ (*rain*) dó<sup>i</sup>zhd' (d' as in *due*)

2. After **ш** and **ж** the soft sign **ь** becomes like the hard sign **ъ**, i.e. mute, and loses its effect.

3. All the other consonants are softened by **ь**, but this is very difficult for foreigners to express, especially at the end of words (**ь** never occurs after **к**, **г**, or **х**).

4. After **ш** and **ж** the vowel **и** sounds like **ы**<sup>1</sup>:

úжинъ (*supper*) úzhyn.

5. After all the other consonants except **л**, **н**, **т**, **д**, **и** loses its initial *y*-sound :

пíво (*beer*) píva.

6. Also at the beginning of words **и** loses its *y*-sound :

имéйніе (*property*) imyéiniye

except in the three words

имъ, ихъ, ими, cf. pp. 96, 151, 177.

7. After **ж**, **ш**, **ч**, and **щ** the vowel **e** (Ё) loses its initial *y*-sound :

ужé (*already*) uzhé.

8. After all the other consonants except **л**, **н**, **т**, **д**, **e** (Ё) loses its initial *y*-sound in rapid speech when it is unaccented and often even when it is accented ; this is expressed in transliteration by bracketing the (y) :

врéмя (*time*) vr(y)émya.

9. After **ж**, **ш**, **ч**, and **щ** the vowel [ë] loses its *y*-sound <sup>2</sup>:

ещё (*yet, still, more*) yeshchó

colloquially : ishchó.

10. In the masc. and neut. genitive singular of all pronouns and adjectives **г** is pronounced like **в** :

когó (*of whom*) kavó

<sup>1</sup> Except when followed by a soft vowel or the soft sign, e.g. **жизнь** (*life*), zhizn'.

<sup>2</sup> And in these cases is sometimes even written o.

## CHAPTER 3

## INDECLINABLE WORDS

и	i	<i>and</i>
а	a	<i>and, but</i>
но	no	<i>but</i>
ну, нусъ, нука'	nu, nus, nuka	<i>well!</i>
йли	ílyi	<i>or</i>
и . . . и . . .	i . . . i . . .	<i>both . . . and . . .</i>
ни . . . ни . . .	nyi . . . nyi . . .	<i>neither . . . nor . . .</i>
йли . . . йли . . .	ílyi . . . ílyi . . .	<i>either . . . or . . .</i>
да	da	<i>yes (also = and, but)</i>
нѣтъ	nyéat	<i>no (also = there is not)</i>
не	nye	<i>not</i>
гдѣ	ghdyé	<i>where</i>
тутъ	tut	<i>here</i>
здѣсь	zdyé's	
тамъ	tam	<i>there</i>
вездѣ	vezdyé	<i>everywhere</i>
нигдѣ	nyighdyé	<i>nowhere</i>
напрѣво	napráva	<i>on or to the right</i>
налѣво	nalyéava	<i>on or to the left</i>
сегодня	s(y)evódnya	<i>to-day</i>
когда	kaghdá	<i>when</i>
тепѣрь	tyep(y)éir'	<i>now</i>
тогда	taghdá	<i>then</i>
всегда	fs(y)eghdá	<i>always</i>
иногда	inaghhdá	<i>sometimes</i>
никогда	nyikaghhdá	<i>never</i>
давнѣ	davnó	<i>long since</i>
недавнѣ	nyedávna	<i>lately</i>

вотъ	vot	<i>here is, there is</i>
вонъ	von	<i>over there, yonder</i>
тбже	tózhe	
также	tákzhe	<i>also, likewise</i>
уже	uzhé	
ужъ	uzh	
даже	dázhe	<i>already, now, really</i>
опять	apyáit'	<i>even</i>
ещё	ishchó	<i>again</i>
ещё не	ishchó nye	<i>yet, still, more</i>
уже не	uzhé nye	<i>not yet</i>
совсѣмъ	safsyéam	<i>no longer</i>
не совсѣмъ	nye safsyéam	<i>quite</i>
совсѣмъ не . . .	safsyéam nye	<i>not quite</i>
бочень	óchen'	<i>not at all . . .</i>
не бочень	nye óchen'	<i>very, very much</i>
вѣдь	vit'	<i>not very</i>
почти	pachtyí	<i>for</i>
слишкомъ	slyíshkam	<i>nearly</i>
довольно	davó'l'na	<i>too</i>
много	mnóga	<i>enough</i>
бочень много	óchen' mnóga	<i>much, a lot, many</i>
мало	mála	<i>a great deal, many</i>
немнога	nyemnóga	<i>little, not enough</i>
немножко	nyemnóshka	<i>a little, some</i>
нѣсколько	nyé <sup>a</sup> skal'ka	<i>a few, some few</i>
нисколько	nyiskó'l'ka	<i>not in the least</i>
сколько	skó'l'ka	<i>how much, how many</i>
столько	stó'l'ka	<i>so much, as much</i>
только	tó'l'ka	<i>only, however, but</i>

какъ	kak	<i>how, as</i>
такъ	tak	<i>so, thus</i>
какъ м\'яло	kak mála	<i>what a little, how few</i>
такъ м\'яло	tak mála	<i>such a little, so few</i>
такъ мн\'яго	tak mnóga	<i>such a lot</i>
ст\'олько	stóil'ka	
ск\'олько	skóil'ka	<i>what a lot</i>
р\'азвѣ ?	rázv(y)e	<i>surely not ?</i>
неуж\'ели !	nyeuzh\'elyi	<i>can it be that ?</i>
р\'азвѣ . . . не ?	rázv(y)e nye	<i>surely ?</i>
вр\'ядъ ли	vryádlyi	<i>it is doubtful whether</i>
пож\'алуйста N.B.	pazhálsta	<i>please</i>
спасибо	spasíba	<i>thank you</i>
извините	izvinyít ye	<i>excuse me</i>
простите	prastyít ye	<i>forgive me</i>
прощ\'айте	prashcháitye	<i>good-bye</i>
здр\'авствуйте	(zdráfstvuít ye)	<i>how do you do (lit. be well)</i>
usually pronounced zdrástye		
до свид\'ания	dasvidániya	<i>au revoir (lit. till the meeting)</i>
н\'ужно	núzhna	<i>it is necessary, one must</i>
н\'адо	náda	
не н\'ужно	nye núzhna	<i>it is not necessary</i>
не н\'адо	nye náda	<i>it is unnecessary, don't</i>
м\'ожна	mózhna	<i>it is possible, one may</i>
нельзя	nyel'zyá	<i>it is impossible, one mayn't</i>
гд\'я-то	ghdyéata	<i>somewhere</i>
гд\'я-нибудь	ghdyényibut'	<i>anywhere</i> <i>somewhere or other</i>

когдá-то	kaghdáta	<i>some time, formerly</i>
когдá-нибудь	kaghdányibut'	{ <i>any time</i> <i>some time or other</i>
кáкъ-то	kákta	<i>somehow, sort of, such as</i>
кáкъ-нибúдь	káknyibut'	{ <i>anyhow</i> <i>somehow or other</i>
авóсь, небóсь, да кáкъ-нибудь!	(Russian proverb)	
avó's', nyebó's', da káknyibut'		<i>with luck, no doubt, we'll muddle through!</i>

## CHAPTER 4

### EASY SENTENCES AND PHRASES FORMED WITHOUT ANY VERB

The present tense of the verb *to be* is almost always omitted in Russian, but cf. p. 27.

кто éто ?	khto é̄ta	} = <i>who is this, who is that ?</i>
éто кто ?		
что éто ?	chto <sup>1</sup> é̄ta	} = <i>what is this, what is that ?</i>
éто что ?		
éто онъ		= <i>it is he, that is he</i>
éто онъ ?		
онъ <sup>2</sup> ли éто ?		} = <i>is it he ? is that he ?</i>
да, éто онá <sup>2</sup>		= <i>yes, it is she</i>
нѣть, éто не онí <sup>2</sup>		= <i>no, it is not they</i>

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially shto.

<sup>2</sup> For the pronunciation of these cf. p. 55

## 14 EASY PHRASES WITHOUT VERBS

гдѣ онъ ?	= <i>where is he ?</i>
она тутъ	
она здѣсь	= <i>she is here</i>
они тамъ	= <i>they are there</i>
она тамъ ?	
тамъ ли она ?	= <i>is she there ?</i>
она здѣсь ?	
здѣсь ли онъ ?	= <i>is he here ?</i>
кто тамъ ?	= <i>who is there ?</i>

OBS. A question must not be introduced by the interrogative particle ли when it already contains an interrogative pronoun or adverb such as кто, что, где.

онъ тутъ и она тутъ = *he is here and she is here*  
 она здѣсь а онъ тамъ = *she is here but he is there*

OBS. The particle а can often be translated by *and*, but always implies an antithesis.

это или онъ или она = *it is either he or she*  
 это ни онъ ни она = *it is neither he nor she*

онъ, она, оно здѣсь = *it is here*  
 они, онѣ тамъ = *they are there*

OBS. оно is the specifically neuter personal pronoun meaning *it*, but it must be remembered that if the object referred to is masculine, then онъ, and if feminine, then она must be used, both of which, in the case of inanimate objects, would be translated in English by *it*. The place of оно is often taken by это. Similarly онѣ is the specifically

feminine plural of the personal pronoun, while он́й is the masculine and neuter plural, both meaning *they*; when the objects referred to are of several genders, e.g. masculine and feminine, он́й is used.

ВОТЬ ОНЬ	=	{ here he is, there he is here it is, there it is}
ВОТЬ ОНА	=	{ here she is, there she is here it is, there it is}
ВОТЬ ОНО	=	here it is, there it is
ВОТЬ ОНИ	=	here they are, there they are
ВОТЬ ОНЬ	{	
ВОТЬ ОНИЙ ЗДЁСЬ	{	this is where they are, here
ВОТЬ ОНЬ ТАМЬ	=	there he (or it) is over there
ВОТЬ ОНА ТАМЬ	=	there she (or it) is over there
ВОТЬ ОНИЙ ГДЁ	{	
ВОТЬ ГДЁ ОНИЙ	{	that's where they are
ВОТЬ ГДЁ	=	that's where (he or it is)
ОНЬ УЖЕ ЗДЁСЬ	=	he is already here
ОНА ЕЩЁ ТАМЬ	=	she is still there
МЫ ЕЩЁ ЗДЁСЬ	=	we are still here
ОНИ УЖЕ ТАМЬ	=	they are already there
Я УЖЕ ЗДЁСЬ, А ТЫ ЕЩЁ ТАМЬ	=	I am here already, but thou art still there
ОНЬ ЕЩЁ ЗДЁСЬ, А ОНА	{	
УЖЕ ТАМЬ	{	he is still here, but she is already there
ОНЬ ТОЖЕ ЗДЁСЬ	=	he is here also
ОНА ТОЖЕ ТАМЬ	=	she is there also
ОНИ ТЕПÉРЬ ТАМЬ ТОЖЕ	=	they are there now also
МЫ ТОЖЕ ВСЕГДА ДÓМА	=	we also are always at home

онъ опять тамъ	=	<i>he is there again</i>
она опять здѣсь	=	<i>she is here again</i>
вотъ онъ опять !	=	<i>here he is again !</i>
мы опять дома	=	<i>we are again at home</i>
онъ теперъ опять здѣсь	=	<i>he is here again now</i>
она теперъ опять тамъ	=	<i>she is there again now</i>
онъ сего дня тутъ	=	<i>he is here to-day</i>
она сего дня дома	=	<i>she is at home to-day</i>
они сего дня тамъ	=	<i>they are there to-day</i>
онъ теперъ здѣсь	=	<i>he is now here</i>
она теперъ тамъ	=	<i>she is now there</i>
гдѣ они теперъ ?	=	<i>where are they now ?</i>
они теперъ дома	=	<i>they are now at home</i>
они теперъ дома ?	}	<i>are they at home now ?</i>
дома ли они теперъ ?		
теперъ нельзя	=	<i>now one musn't, can't</i>
теперъ можно	=	<i>now one may, can</i>
онъ всегда тамъ	=	<i>he is always there</i>
она всегда здѣсь	=	<i>she is always here</i>
они всегда дома	=	<i>they are always at home</i>
ты всегда здѣсь ?	=	<i>art thou always here ?</i>
я всегда здѣсь	=	<i>I am always here</i>
вы всегда тамъ ?	=	<i>are you always there ?</i>
мы всегда тамъ	=	<i>we are always there</i>
я здѣсь, а ты тамъ	=	<i>I am here, but thou art there</i>
мы тутъ, а вы тамъ	=	<i>we are here, but you are there</i>
рѣзвъ она здѣсь ?	=	<i>is she here ?</i>
неужѣли онъ тамъ ?	=	<i>surely she is not here ?</i>
	=	<i>can it be that he is there ?</i>

rázv'b éto ne oní ?	= <i>surely that is they ?</i>
vrád'li oní dóm'a	= <i>I doubt whether they are at home</i>
ya давнó тутъ	= <i>I have been here for a long time</i>
oná тамъ недáвно	= <i>she hasn't been there long</i>

Obs. ты is used in Russian amongst relatives and intimate friends of more or less the same age ; parents and children address each other by ты, and children are usually addressed by ты by their parents' friends ; it was formerly invariably used by the educated classes when addressing servants, cab-drivers, porters, &c., but nowadays вы is much more generally used for this purpose, and in any case it is better for a foreigner to say вы.

Obs. In correspondence Вы must be written with a capital even in the middle of a sentence. On the other hand я is only written (or printed) with a capital at the beginning of a sentence, after a full stop.

## CHAPTER 5

### A FEW USEFUL ADVERBS

In the case of most adjectives the Neuter Nominative Singular, which is the same in form as the Adverb, can stand alone without онó or éto and have the meaning of a whole sentence.

хорошó	(k)harashó	(it is) good, nice
некорошó	nyekharashó	(it is) not nice
плóхо	plókha	(it is) bad
лúчше	lúchshe	(it is) better

хўже	(k)húzhe	<i>(it is) worse</i>
чўмъ	chem	<i>than</i>
горáздо	garázda	<i>much</i> (only followed by comparatives)

(For other common adverbs cf. pp. 24, 25.)

хорошó	= <i>all right, very well</i>
хорошó	= <i>nice, good</i> (neuter nom. sing.)
это хорошó	= { <i>that is all right, this is all right</i> { <i>that is nice, this is good</i>
это нехорошó	= { <i>that is bad, this is bad</i> { <i>that is wrong</i> (sc. <i>unpleasant</i> <i>or unjust</i> )
вотъ хорошó !	= <i>isn't that nice !</i>
вотъ это хорошó !	= <i>there, that's nice ! this is nice !</i>
здѣсь хорошó	= <i>it is nice here</i>
здѣсь нехорошó	= <i>it is not nice here</i>
тамъ хорошó	= <i>it is nice there</i>
тепéрь хорошó	= <i>it's all right now</i>
какъ это хорошó	= <i>how nice this is</i>
это такъ хорошó	= <i>that is so nice</i>
какъ это нехорошó	= <i>how horrid that is</i>
это бченъ хорошó	= <i>that is very nice</i>
это бченъ нехорошó	= <i>that is not at all nice</i>
какъ тамъ хорошó	= <i>how nice it is there</i>
такъ здѣсь хорошó	= <i>it is so nice here</i>
тамъ такъ хорошó	= <i>it is so nice there</i>
какъ хорошó здѣсь	= <i>how nice it is here</i>
какъ хорошó тепéрь	= <i>how nice it is now</i>
здѣсь не такъ хорошó	= <i>it is not so nice here</i>
тамъ такъ нехорошó	= <i>it is so horrid there</i>
здѣсь всегдá хорошó	= <i>here it's always nice</i>

тамъ не всегдá хорошó	= <i>it's not always nice there</i>
такъ, хорошó	= <i>it's all right like that</i>
такъ, нехорошó	= <i>it's not right like that</i>
это лúчше	= <i>this is better, that is better</i>
это хúже	= <i>this is worse, that is worse</i>
здéсь лúчше	= <i>it is better here</i>
тамъ хúже	= <i>it is worse there</i>
здeсь лúчше чéмъ тамъ	= <i>here it's better than there</i>
тамъ хúже чéмъ здeсь	= <i>there it's worse than here</i>
здeсь хорошó, а тамъ	= <i>it's nice here, but it's better</i>
лúчше	<i>there</i>
здeсь нехорошó, а тамъ	= <i>it's bad here, but it's worse</i>
хúже	<i>there</i>
гдé лúчше, здeсь	= <i>where is it better, here or there?</i>
тамъ ?	
какъ лúчше, такъ	= <i>how is it better, like this or like</i>
такъ ?	<i>that?</i>
вотъ такъ лúчше	= <i>there, it's better like that</i>
нéть, такъ хúже	= <i>no, it's worse like that</i>
да, такъ лúчше	= <i>yes, it's better like that</i>
да, такъ ещё лúчше	= <i>yes, that's still better</i>
нeть, такъ ещё хúже	= <i>no, that's still worse</i>
это ещё лúчше	= <i>that's still better</i>
это ещё хúже	= <i>that's still worse</i>
сегóдня лúчше	= <i>it's better to-day</i>
тепéрь хúже	= <i>now it's worse</i>
сегóдня опáть лúчше	= <i>it's better again to-day</i>
тепéрь опáть хúже	= <i>now it's worse again</i>
тепéрь ужé лúчше	= <i>it's better now (already)</i>
здeсь ещё лúчше	= <i>it's still better here</i>
дбма всегдá лúчше	= <i>it's always better at home</i>
это плóхо	= <i>that is bad</i>

## CHAPTER 6

## INTRODUCING WORDS WITH MASCULINE AND FEMININE ENDINGS

онъ здорбъ <sup>1</sup>	=he is well (masc. nom. sing.)
онá здорóва <sup>2</sup>	=she is well (fem. nom. sing.)
они́ } здорбы	=they are well (masc. nom. plur.)
онъ } здорбъ	=fem.
я здорбъ	=I am well (masc.)
я здорóва	=I am well (fem.)
ты нездорбъ	=thou art unwell (masc.)
ты нездорóва	=thou art unwell (fem.)
мы здорбы	=we are well (masc. and fem.)
вы нездорбы	=you are unwell (masc. and fem.)
ráзвѣ вы нездорбы ?	=aren't you well ? (masc. and fem.)
вы здорбы ?	} =are you well ? (masc. and fem.)
здорбы ли вы ?	

(ли is the interrogative particle and always indicates a question.)

это здорово	=this is good for the health (neut. nom. sing.)
это нездорово	} =that is bad for the health
это вредно	
это очень хорошо	=that is very nice
это очень нехорошо	=that is very bad
это очень нездорово	} =that is very bad for the health
это очень вредно	
ráзвѣ это вредно ?	=surely that isn't bad for one ?

это совсѣмъ хорошо	= <i>that's quite all right</i>
онъ всегда здорово	= <i>he is always well</i>
она теперь нездорова	= <i>she is not well now</i>
вы опять нездоровы?	= <i>are you unwell again?</i>
я совсѣмъ здорово	= <i>I am quite well</i>
я не совсѣмъ здорово	= <i>I am not quite well</i>
я бченъ нездорово	= <i>I am far from well</i>
я ужѣ совсѣмъ здорово	= <i>I am now quite well</i>
я еще не совсѣмъ здорово	= <i>I am not yet quite well</i>
онъ боленъ <sup>1</sup>	= <i>he is ill</i> (masc. nom. sing.)
она болѣна <sup>2</sup>	= <i>she is ill</i> (fem. nom. sing.)
они болѣны	= <i>they are ill</i> (masc. nom. plur.)
онѣ болѣны	= <i>they are ill</i> (fem. nom. plur.)
я бченъ боленъ	= <i>I am very ill</i> (masc.)
ты серьеzно болѣна	= <i>thou art seriously ill</i> (fem.)
вы опасно болѣны	= <i>you are dangerously ill</i> (masc. or fem.)
онъ не бченъ боленъ	= <i>he is not very ill</i>
она не серьеzно болѣна	= <i>she is not seriously ill</i>
вы не опасно болѣны	= <i>you are not seriously ill</i>
онъ теперь боленъ	= <i>he is ill now</i>
она всегда болѣна	= <i>she is always ill</i>
онъ еще боленъ	= <i>he is still ill</i>
она тоже болѣна	= <i>she is ill also</i>
онъ опять боленъ	= <i>he is ill again</i>
неужѣли она болѣна?	= <i>surely she is not ill?</i>
я радъ <sup>3</sup>	= <i>I am glad</i> (masc.)
я рада <sup>4</sup>	= <i>I am glad</i> (fem.)

<sup>1</sup> Pron. bólyen.<sup>2</sup> Pron. bal'ná.<sup>3</sup> Pron. rat.<sup>4</sup> Pron. ráda.

## 22 MASCULINE AND FEMININE ENDINGS

вы рáды ?	=are you glad ? (masc. and fem.)
мы бчень рáды	=we are very glad (masc. and fem.)
я такъ радъ какъ я рáда !	=I am so glad (masc.) =how glad I am ! (fem.)
развѣ вы не рáды ?	=aren't you glad ? (masc. and fem.)
онъ счаstливъ <sup>1</sup>	=he is happy (masc.)
она счаstлива <sup>2</sup>	=she is happy (fem.)
они такъ счаstливы	=they are so happy
какъ они счаstливы !	=how happy they are
онъ несчастенъ <sup>3</sup>	=he is unhappy (masc.)
она несчáстна <sup>4</sup>	=she is unhappy (fem.)
мы такъ несчáстны	=we are so unfortunate
какъ вы несчáстны !	=how unlucky you are !
я довóленъ <sup>5</sup>	=I am satisfied, contented (masc.)
я довóльна <sup>6</sup>	=I am satisfied, contented (fem.)
они бчень довóльны	=they are very glad
они такъ довóльны	=they are so pleased
вы довóльны ?	} =are you satisfied ?
довóльны ли вы ?	
мы совсéмъ довóльны	=we are quite satisfied
мы не совсéмъ довóльны	=we are not quite satisfied
онъ недовóленъ	=he is displeased
она бчень недовóльна	=she is angry, annoyed
вы бчень недовóльны ?	=are you angry, annoyed ?

<sup>1</sup> schástlyif.

<sup>3</sup> nyeschástyen.

<sup>5</sup> davólyen.

<sup>2</sup> schástlyiva.

<sup>4</sup> nyeschástna.

<sup>6</sup> davól'na.

это довольно	= <i>that is enough</i>
это не довольно	= <i>that is not enough</i>
довольно	= <i>it is enough</i>
очень довольно	} = <i>it's quite enough</i>
совсёмъ довольно	
уже довольно	} = <i>that's enough now</i>
это ужъ довольно	
развѣ вы недовольны ?	= <i>aren't you satisfied ?</i>
виноватъ !	= { <i>excuse me !</i> = { (lit. <i>I am to blame</i> , masc.)
виновата !	= { <i>excuse me !</i> = { (lit. <i>I am to blame</i> , fem.)
онъ правъ <sup>1</sup>	= <i>he is right</i>
она пра́ва <sup>2</sup>	= <i>she is right</i>
вы пра́вы	= <i>you are right</i>
вы непра́вы	= <i>you are wrong</i>
онъ долженъ <sup>3</sup>	= <i>he must</i>
она должна <sup>4</sup>	= <i>she must</i>
мы должны	= <i>we must</i>
они должны	= <i>they must</i>
это серьёзно <sup>5</sup>	= <i>that is serious</i>
вы серьёзны ?	} = <i>are you serious ?</i>
серьёзны ли вы ?	
это довольно серьёзно	= <i>that is fairly serious</i>
это очень серьёзно	= <i>that is very serious</i>
развѣ это серьёзно ?	= <i>is it really serious ?</i>
готово <sup>6</sup>	= <i>it is ready</i>
уже готово	= <i>it is now ready</i>
ещё не готово	= <i>it is not yet ready</i>

<sup>1</sup> praf.<sup>3</sup> dólzhen.<sup>5</sup> seryózna.<sup>2</sup> práva.<sup>4</sup> dalzhná.<sup>6</sup> gatóva.

вы готóвы ?	=are you ready ?
онá готóва <sup>1</sup>	=she is ready
онъ готóвъ <sup>2</sup>	=he is ready
неужéли вы не готóвы !	= { can it be that you are not ready ? surely you are ready !

## CHAPTER 7

## CONTINUATION OF TWO PREVIOUS CHAPTERS

хóлодно (or холоднó)	(k)hóladna (k)haladnó	} it is cold
теплó	tyepló	it is warm (of the tem- perature, clothes)
жárко	zhárka	it is hot (of the tempera- ture)
прохлáдно	prakhládna	it is cool
горячó	garyachó	it is hot (of food, water, tea, plates, &c.)
темнó (or тёмно)	tyemnó tyómna	} it is dark
свěтлó	sv(y)etló	it is light
ráно	rána	it is early
пóздно	póz(d)na	it is late
дёшево	dyósheva	it is cheap
дóрого	dóraga	it is dear
вкýсно	fkúsna	it is nice (to taste)
невкýсно	nyefkúsna	it is not nice (to taste)

<sup>1</sup> gatóva.<sup>2</sup> gatóf.

далеко (or далёко)	dalyekó dalyóka)	} <i>it is far</i>
блíзко	blyíska	
зáнято	zányata	<i>it is occupied, engaged</i>
свобóдно	svabódna	<i>it is free, vacant</i>
зáперто	záp(y)erta	<i>it is shut</i>
откры́то	atkrýta	<i>it is open</i>
опáсно	apásna	<i>it is dangerous</i>
безопáсно	b(y)ezapásna	<i>it is safe</i>

сегóдня хóлодно	= <i>it is cold to-day</i>
здéсь теплó	= <i>it is warm here</i>
туть прохлáдно	= <i>it is cool here</i>
тамъ жárko	= <i>it is hot there</i>
ужé темнó	= <i>it is already dark</i>
ещё свéтлó	= <i>it is still light</i>
ужé пóздно	= <i>it is now (too) late</i>
ещё ráно	= <i>it is yet early (too soon)</i>
сегóдня бчень жárko	= <i>it is very hot to-day</i>
сегóдня довóльно теплó	= <i>it is fairly warm to-day</i>
сегóдня слíшкомъ хóлодно	= <i>it is too cold to-day</i>
тепéрь ужé не хóлодно	= <i>it is no longer cold now</i>
тепéрь ужé не такъ теплó	= <i>it is no longer so warm now</i>
тепéрь ужъ совсéмъ темнó	= <i>it is really quite dark now</i>
тепéрь ужъ бчень пóздно	= <i>it is really very late now</i>
тепéрь ужъ слíшкомъ жárko	= <i>it is really too hot now</i>

## 26 EASY SENTENCES WITHOUT VERBS

The word *ужé* is frequently cut down to *ужъ* and often loses its original meaning of *already* and comes to mean *really*.

это дёшево	= <i>that is cheap</i>
это бчень дёшево	= <i>that is very cheap</i>
это не дёшево	= <i>that is not cheap</i>
какъ это дёшево !	= <i>how cheap that is !</i>
ráзвѣ́ ёто дёшево ?	= <i>do you call that cheap ?</i>
это дброго	= <i>that is dear</i>
это бчень дброго	= <i>that is very dear</i>
это не дброго	= <i>that is not dear</i>
это совсѣмъ не дброго	= <i>that is not at all dear</i>
это ужъ слїшкомъ дброго	= <i>that is really too dear</i>
какъ ёто дброго !	= <i>how dear that is !</i>
неужёли ёто такъ дброго ?	= <i>surely this is not so dear ?</i>
это вкўсно	= <i>that is nice (only of food)</i>
это не вкўсно	= <i>that is not nice (only of food)</i>
ráзвѣ́ ёто вкўсно ?	= <i>is that nice ?</i>
ráзвѣ́ ёто не вкўсно ?	= <i>isn't that nice ?</i>
это бчень далекб	= <i>that is very far</i>
это совсѣмъ близко	= <i>that is quite near</i>
ráзвѣ́ ёто далекб ?	= <i>is it far then ?</i>
неужёли ёто такъ близко ?	= <i>surely it is not so near ?</i>
сегдня зáперто	= <i>to-day it is shut</i>
сегдня открыто	= <i>to-day it is open</i>
ráзвѣ́ не открыто ?	= <i>isn't it open ?</i>
неужёли зáперто ?	= <i>surely it isn't shut ?</i>

опа́сно	= <i>it is dangerous</i>
это опа́сно	= <i>that is dangerous</i>
это оченъ опа́сно	= <i>that is very dangerous</i>
это не опа́сно	= <i>that is not dangerous</i>
это безопа́сно	= <i>that is safe</i> (lit. = <i>dangerless</i> )
тамъ оченъ опа́сно	= <i>it is very dangerous there</i>
здесь совсѣмъ безопа́сно	= <i>it is quite safe here</i>

(cf. chap. 47).

## CHAPTER 8

### THE VERB *TO BE* (БЫТЬ)

#### The Present

There are only two parts of the present tense of the verb *to be* which are ever used, viz.:

есть	=	<i>is</i>
суть	=	<i>are</i>

of which the second is as good as obsolete, and the first is only used in the sense of

*there is*, *there exists*, *is there?* *does there exist?*

есть Богъ = *there is a God*  
 Богъ есть = *God exists*

есть вода? = *is there water?*  
 вода есть = *there is water*

*There is not* is always rendered by *нѣть* (cf. p. 10), followed by the Genitive; *нѣть* is a contraction of *не есть*.

### The Past

The past tense of the verb *to be*, like that of all other Russian verbs, is formed from the infinitive (быть) and varies not, as in other languages, according to person, but according to gender and number,<sup>1</sup> viz. :

я былъ = *I was* (if masculine)

я была = *I was* (if feminine)

ты былъ = *thou wast* (masc.)

ты была = *thou wast* (fem.)

онъ былъ = *he was*

она́ была = *she was*

это (or онó) бы́ло = *it was*

мы бы́ли = *we were* (masc. and fem.)

вы бы́ли = *you were* (masc. and fem.)

они́ бы́ли = *they were* (masc. and neut.)

онъ́ бы́ли = *they were* (fem.)

In answers to questions the verb in Russian is often repeated instead of using the words

да = yes  
and нетъ = no

especially in such questions as

вы бы́ли тамъ ?      } = { *were you there ? or,*  
or бы́ли ли вы тамъ ?      } = { *have you been there ?*

<sup>1</sup> It is really a past participle active, not a tense.

былъ = yes  
 нé былъ = no } if masc. sing.

онá былá здéсь ? = *has she been here ?*

былá = yes  
 не былá = no

онíй были дóма ? = *were they at home ?*

были = yes

(cf. chap. 42).

### The Conditional

The conditional tense of the verb *to be* is formed, like that of all other Russian verbs, by the addition of the particle *бы* (often -бъ in poetry) to the past as follows :

я былъ бы      } = { *I should have been, or*  
 or я бы былъ      } = { *I should be*

онá былá бы } = { *she would have been, or*  
 or онá бы былá } = { *she would be*

мы были бы } = { *we should have been, or*  
 or мы бы были } = { *we should be*

мы были бы óчень ráды  
*we should be (or should have been) very glad*

это было бы óчень опáсно  
*that would be (or would have been) very dangerous*

онъ быль бы довбленъ  
*he would be contented, pleased*

When negated, the word не is placed immediately before the words быль, была, было, &c.

### The Future

я бўду	= <i>I shall be</i>
ты бўдешъ	= <i>thou wilt be</i>
онъ	
она	бўдетъ = <i>he, she, it will be</i>
оно	
мы бўдемъ	= <i>we shall be</i>
вы бўдете	= <i>you will be</i>
они	
онъ	бўдуть = <i>they will be</i>

вчера fcherá *yesterday*  
 сегодня s(y)evódnya *to-day*  
 завтра záftra *to-morrow*  
 послезавтра poslyezáftra *the day after to-morrow*

вчера мы были дома =*yesterday we were at home*  
 завтра мы бўдемъ дома =*to-morrow we shall be at home*

### The Imperative

(2nd sing.) будь but'  
 (2nd plur.) бўдьте búttye  
 бўдьте такъ добры ! =*be so good!*

## CHAPTER 9

## THE NOMINATIVE

## Substantives

## NOMINATIVE SINGULAR

It will have been noticed in the preceding pages that the endings of the nominative singular<sup>1</sup> are :

Masculine -**ъ**, e.g. онъ = *he*

Neuter -**о**, e.g. онó = *it*  
      -**то** = *this, or that*  
      -**что** = *what*

Feminine -**а**, e.g. онá = *she*

The three endings :

-**ъ**

-**о**

-**а**

are all hard : corresponding to them are the three soft endings :

Masculine -**ь** (*or -й*)

Neuter -**е** (*or -ё*)

Feminine -**я**

<sup>1</sup> The words **кто** = *who*

**я** = *I*

**ты** = *thou*

can be used for masculine or feminine.

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masc.	магазинъ	magazín	shop
		билéтъ	bilyéat	ticket
		столъ	stol	table
	Neut.	мѣсто	myésta	place
		село	s(y)eló	village
		общество	ópshchestva	society, company
	Fem.	бáба	bába	peasant woman
		кóмната	kómnata	room
		избá	izbá	peasant's hut
SOFT NOUNS	Masc.	автомобíль	aftamabil'	motor-car
		слúчай	slúchai	incident
		соловéй	salavyéi	nightingale
		Васíлій	vasílyi	Basil
	Neut.	пóле	pólye	field
		ружьё	ruzhyó	rifle
		имѣніе	imyéniye	property (land)
		недѣля	nyedyélyá	week
	Fem.	статья	statyá	newspaper article
		áрмія	ármiya	army
		Россія	rassíya	Russia

There is no article in Russian, either definite or indefinite ; the place of the former is supplied, when required, by the pronoun *тотъ* = *that yonder*, that of the latter by the pronouns *оди́нъ* = *one* or *нѣкоторый* = *a certain*.

A large number of nouns denoting males follow the feminine declension, e.g. :

- (hard) **мущи́на**<sup>1</sup> mushchína = *man* (as opposed to *woman*)  
 (soft) **судья́** sudyá = *judge*.

A large number of diminutive male Christian names likewise follow the feminine declension :

Алёша	Alyósha	<i>Alexis</i>
Вáня	Ványa	<i>John</i>
Вáся	Vásya	<i>Basil</i>
Волóдя	Valódyá	<i>Vladímir</i>
Кóля	Kólya	<i>Nicholas</i>
Мýша	Mísha	<i>Michael</i>
Павлúша	Pavlúsha	<i>Paul</i>
Пéтя	P(y)étya	<i>Peter</i>
Сáша	Sásha	<i>Alexander</i>
Серёжа	Seryózha	<i>Sergius</i>
Θéдя	F(y)é'dya	<i>Theodore</i>

(For the full names cf. p. 52.)

A large number of feminine nouns end in -ь, such as :

лошадь	lóshat'	<i>horse</i>
вещь	vye'shch'	<i>thing</i>
цéрковь	ts(y)é'rkaf'	<i>church</i>
мать	má't'	<i>mother</i>
дочь	dó'ch'	<i>daughter</i>

A few neuter nouns end in -я, e.g. :

врéмя	vr(y)é'mya	<i>time</i>
дитя́	dyityá	<i>child</i>

<sup>1</sup> Also spelt *мужчи́на*.

### Rules for identification

All nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -ъ, -й, are masculine.

All nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -о, -е are neuter.

Most nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -а, -я are feminine.

Nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -ь are masculine or feminine.

### NOMINATIVE PLURAL

The nominative plural endings are :

Masculine	} -ы, e.g. páды = <i>glad</i>
Feminine	
Neuter	-а

These endings are hard ; corresponding to them are the soft endings :

Masculine	} -и
Feminine	
Neuter	-я

Examples :

HARD	Masculine	магазíны	magazíny
		бидéты	bilyéty
		столы	stalý
Neuter	мъстá	m(y)está	
	сёла	syóla	
Feminine	общества	ópshestva	
	бáбы	báby	
	кóмнаты	kómnaty	
	íзбы	ízby	

SOFT	Masculine	автомобíли aftamabílyi слúчаи slúchayi соловý salavyí
	Neuter	полý palyá ружý ruzhyá
		имéнія imyéniya недéлі nyedyélyi
Feminine	статьí statyí áрмії ármiyi	статьí statyí
		áрмії ármiyi

Nouns denoting males which follow the feminine declension :

(hard) мушкýны mushchíny

(soft) сúдьи súdyi

A good number of masculine nouns of which the nominative singular ends in -ъ have the nominative plural in -a,<sup>1</sup> e.g. :

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.
домъ dom house	домá damá
глазъ glas eye	глазá glazá
гróдъ górat town	городá garadá
бéрегъ b(y)érek shore	берегá beregá

A large number of masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular lose this letter throughout the whole of the rest of the declension, e.g. :

	NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.
HARD	конéцъ kanyéats end	концí kantsý
	посóль pasól ambassador	послý paslý
SOFT	день dyé'n' day	дни dnyi
	огóнь agó'n' fire, light	огнý agnyí

<sup>1</sup> Several nouns have both plurals, in -ы and in -а, with a difference in meaning between the two, cf. p. 37.

All masculine nouns ending in the nominative singular in

-КЪ, -ГЪ, -ХЪ, -ЖЪ, -ЧЪ, -ШЪ, -ЩЪ

and all feminine nouns ending in the nominative singular in

-ка, -га, -ха, -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща

have the nominative plural in

-ки, -ги, -хи, -жи, -чи, -ши, щи

because ы cannot stand after these consonants; but nevertheless -жи and -ши are pronounced -жы and -шы.

Examples :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
мáльчикъ	máil'chik	boy
дѣвочка	dyé^vachka	little girl
ключъ	klyuch	key
свѣчá	sv(y)echá	candle
ножъ	nozh	knife
экипáжъ	ekipázh	carriage
калóша	kalósha	galosh
—	—	money
		dénygi

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -инъ have nominative plural in -е.

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
крестья́нинъ	krestyányin	peasant (man)
англичáинъ	anglyichányin	Englishman

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -ёнокъ (denoting the young of animals) have nominative plural in -áta, and follow the neuter declension, e.g.:

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
ребёнокъ	rebýonak	child
цыплёнокъ	tsyplýonak	chicken

A few neuter nouns have nominative plural in -и, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
яблоко	yáblaka	apple
плечо	plyechó	shoulder
колено	kalyé <sup>a</sup> na	knee

A few masculine and neuter nouns have nominative plurals which call for particular notice ; amongst others the commonest are :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR. <sup>1</sup>
стуль	stul	chair
брать	brat	brother
сынъ	syn	son
другъ	druk	friend
сосѣдъ	sasyé <sup>a</sup> t	neighbour
цвѣтъ	tsvyé <sup>a</sup> t	colour
(цвѣтбкъ	tsv(y)etók	flower)
дерево	dyé'reva	tree
судно	súdna	vessel (ship)
ухо	úkha	ear
око	óka	eye (poetical)
чудо	chúda	marvel
небо	nyé <sup>a</sup> ba	heaven, sky
		цвѣтá
		flowers
		деревья
		судá
		уши
		бчи
		чудесá
		небесá

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have nominative plural in -и, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
лóшадь	horse	лóшади
вещь	thing	вéщи

<sup>1</sup> For pronunciation cf. p. 95.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.
цéрковь <i>church</i>	цéркви ts(y)éirkvi
мать <i>mother</i>	мáтери mátyeri
дочь <i>daughter</i>	дóчери dócheri

Two very important words have a similar nominative plural, viz. :

люди lyúdyi = *people*  
дéти dyé'tyi = *children*

Neuter nouns in -я have nominative plural in -ена, e.g. :  
временá vremená = *times* (sc. *seasons*).

## CHAPTER 10

### VOCABULARY

(Where the pronunciation given differs from that laid down in Chapter 2 it is owing to laws of etymology or of colloquial use.)

#### Buildings, rooms, furniture, &c.

#### OUTSIDE

здánie <i>n.</i>	zdániye	<i>building</i>
вокзálъ <i>m.</i>	vakzál	<i>terminus (or large station)</i>
стáнциá <i>f.</i>	stántsiya	<i>small or country station</i>
тамóжня <i>f.</i>	tamózhnya	<i>custom-house</i>
ресторáнь <i>m.</i>	restaráń	<i>restaurant</i>
буфéтъ <i>m.</i>	bufyéat	<i>refreshment-room</i>
гостíница <i>f.</i>	gastyínyitsa	<i>hotel</i>
больníца <i>f.</i>	bal'nyítsa	<i>hospital</i>
теáтръ <i>m.</i>	tyeátr	<i>theatre</i>

дворе́цъ <i>m.</i>	dvaryéats	<i>palace</i>
церко́вь <i>f.</i>	ts(y)érkaf	<i>church</i>
собо́ръ <i>m.</i>	sabór	<i>cathedral</i>
часо́вня <i>f.</i>	chasóvnya	<i>shrine</i>
кóлоколъ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	kólakal	(church) <i>bell(s)</i>
колокольня <i>f.</i>	kalakó'l'nya	<i>belfry</i>
банкъ <i>m.</i>	bank	<i>bank</i>
по́чта <i>f.</i>	póchta	<i>post-office</i>
музе́й <i>m.</i>	muzyéi	<i>museum</i>
галере́я <i>f.</i>	galyeréya	<i>gallery</i>
шко́ла <i>f.</i>	shkóla	<i>} school</i>
учи́лище <i>n.</i>	uchílyishche	
универси́тетъ <i>m.</i>	unyiversityéat	<i>university</i>
бáни <i>f. pl.</i>	bányi	<i>baths</i>
домъ <i>m.</i>	dom	<i>house</i>
да́ча <i>f.</i>	dácha	<i>country villa</i>
воро́та <i>n. pl.</i>	varótá	<i>gate</i>
дворъ <i>m.</i>	dvor	<i>court-yard</i>
подъе́здъ <i>m.</i>	padyéazd	<i>front-door</i>
этáжъ <i>m.</i>	etázh	<i>floor, story</i>
кварти́ра <i>f.</i>	kvartyíra	<i>flat</i>
магази́нъ <i>m.</i>	magazín	<i>shop</i>
лавка <i>f.</i>	láfka	<i>small shop</i>
рынокъ <i>m.</i>	rýnak	<i>market</i>
ряды <i>m. pl.</i>	ryadý	<i>covered rows of shops</i>
кофейная <i>f. adj.</i>	kaf(y)éinaya	<i>café</i>
кондитерская <i>f. adj.</i>	kandyítterskaya	<i>confectioner's</i>
бу́лочная <i>f. adj.</i>	búlachnaya	<i>baker's</i>
портно́й <i>m. adj.</i>	partnói	<i>tailor (sc. his shop)</i>
парикмахе́рская <i>f.</i> <i>adj.</i>	parikmákherskaya	<i>hairstresser's</i>
заво́дъ <i>m.</i>	zavót	<i>establishment, factory</i>
фа́брика <i>f.</i>	fábrika	<i>factory</i>
мельни́ца <i>f.</i>	myél'nyitsa	(water-) <i>mill</i>
труба́ <i>f.</i>	trubá	<i>chimney</i>
забо́ръ <i>m.</i>	zabór	<i>fence</i>
бáшня <i>f.</i>	báshnya	<i>tower</i>
коню́шня <i>f.</i>	kanyúshnya	<i>stables</i>

сарапъ <i>m.</i>	sarái	<i>coach-house</i>
заста́ва <i>f.</i>	zastáva	<i>barrier</i>
кирпичъ <i>m.</i>	kirpích	<i>brick</i>
кáмень <i>m.</i>	kámen'	<i>stone</i>
áдресъ <i>m.</i>	ádres	<i>address</i>
у́лица <i>f.</i>	úlyitsa	<i>street</i>
на́бережная <i>f. adj.</i>	náberezhnaya	<i>quay</i>
проспéктъ <i>m.</i>	praspyéakt	<i>avenue (street)</i>
аллея <i>f.</i>	alyéya	<i>avenue (in garden)</i>
шоссé <i>n. indecl.</i>	shos(y)é	<i>high-road</i>
пло́щадь <i>f.</i>	plóshchat'	<i>square</i>
бульвáръ <i>m.</i>	bul'vár	<i>boulevard</i>
мостъ <i>m.</i>	most	<i>bridge</i>
мостовáя <i>f. adj.</i>	mastaváya	<i>paving (of road)</i>
тrotuárъ <i>m.</i>	trotuár	<i>pavement (footway)</i>

## INSIDE

звонóкъ <i>m.</i>	zvanók	<i>bell</i>
лестница <i>f.</i>	lyéistnitsa	<i>staircase</i>
дверь <i>f.</i>	dv(y)éir'	<i>door</i>
комната <i>f.</i>	kómtnata	<i>room</i>
перéдняя <i>f. adj.</i>	peryéidnyaya	<i>lobby</i>
сéни <i>f. pl.</i>	syéinyi	<i>vestibule</i>
залъ <i>m.</i>	zal	<i>hall, waiting-room</i>
zála <i>f.</i>	zála	
столо́вая <i>f. adj.</i>	stalóvaya	<i>dining-room</i>
гости́ная <i>f. adj.</i>	gastyínaya	<i>drawing-room</i>
спáльня <i>f.</i>	spáil'nya	<i>bedroom</i>
дéтская <i>f. adj.</i>	dyéatskaya	<i>nursery</i>
кухня <i>f.</i>	kúkhnya	<i>kitchen</i>
кабинéть <i>m.</i>	kabinyéat	<i>study</i>
библíотека <i>f.</i>	bibliótyeka	<i>library</i>
вáнная <i>f. adj.</i>	vánnaya	<i>bath-room</i>
пóгребъ <i>m.</i>	pógrep	<i>cellar</i>
кладовáя <i>f. adj.</i>	kladaváya	<i>store-room</i>
чердáкъ <i>m.</i>	cherdák	<i>lumber-room, garret</i>
нúжникъ <i>m.</i>	núzhnyik	<i>W. C.</i>

окнó <i>n.</i>	aknó	<i>window</i>
стéна <i>f.</i>	styená	<i>wall</i>
поль <i>m.</i>	pol	<i>floor (sc. of room)</i>
úголъ <i>m.</i>	úgal	<i>corner</i>
потолóкъ <i>m.</i>	patalók	<i>ceiling</i>
мéбель <i>f.</i>	mébel'	<i>furniture</i>
(печь) пéчка <i>f.</i>	p(y)échka	<i>stove</i>
столъ <i>m.</i>	stol	<i>table</i>
пíсьменный столъ	pís'menny	<i>writing-table</i>
скáтерть <i>m.</i>	skátyert'	<i>table-cloth</i>
буфéтъ <i>m.</i>	bufyéat	<i>sideboard</i>
стулъ <i>m.</i>	stul	<i>chair</i>
крéсло <i>n.</i>	kryéasla	<i>arm-chair</i>
дивáнъ <i>m.</i>	dyiván	<i>sofa</i>
ковёръ <i>m.</i>	kavyór	<i>carpet</i>
картина <i>f.</i>	kartyína	<i>picture</i>
портрéтъ <i>m.</i>	partryéat	<i>portrait</i>
(скамьá) скамéйка <i>f.</i>	skamyéika	<i>bench</i>
шкапъ, шкафъ <i>m.</i>	shkap, shkaf	<i>cupboard</i>
комóдъ <i>m.</i>	kamót	<i>chest of drawers</i>
ýщикъ <i>m.</i>	yáshchik	<i>drawer, box</i>
пóлка <i>f.</i>	pólka	<i>shelf</i>
кровáть <i>f.</i>	kraváit'	<i>bedstead</i>
постéль <i>f.</i>	pastyél'	<i>bed with bedding</i>
подúшка <i>f.</i>	padúshka	<i>pillow, cushion</i>
нáволочка <i>f.</i>	návalachka	<i>pillow-case</i>
вáнна <i>f.</i>	vanna	<i>small bath, tub</i>
зéркало <i>n.</i>	zyéarkala	<i>mirror</i>
простынá <i>f.</i>	prastynyá	<i>sheet</i>
одéяло <i>n.</i>	adyeyála	<i>quilt, blanket</i>
тюфýкъ <i>m.</i>	tyufyák	<i>mattress</i>
умывáльникъ <i>m.</i>	umyváil'nyik	<i>wash-stand</i>
мы́ло <i>n.</i>	mýla	<i>soap</i>
тазъ <i>m.</i>	tas	<i>basin</i>
гýбка <i>f.</i>	gýpka	<i>sponge</i>
крýжка <i>f.</i>	krúshka	<i>jug</i>
полотéнце <i>n.</i>	palatyéntse	<i>towel</i>
горшóкъ <i>m.</i>	garshók	<i>chamber-pot</i>

штóры <i>f. pl.</i>	shtóry	<i>blinds</i>
зáнавéсь <i>m.</i>	zánav(y)es	<i>curtain</i>
шíрмы <i>f. pl.</i>	shírmy	<i>screen</i>
часы <i>m. pl.</i>	chasý	<i>clock, watch</i>
лáмпа <i>f.</i>	lámpa	<i>lamp</i>
абажúръ <i>m.</i>	abazhúr	<i>lamp-shade</i>
(свéчá) свéчка <i>f.</i>	svyéichka	<i>candle</i>
подсвéчникъ <i>m.</i>	patsvyéichnyik	<i>candle-stick</i>
электричество <i>n.</i>	elyektríchestva	<i>electric light</i>
спíчка <i>f.</i>	spíchka	<i>match</i>
огóнь <i>m.</i>	agóin'	<i>light, fire</i>
фонáрь <i>m.</i>	fanáir'	<i>lantern</i>
úголь <i>m.</i>	úgal'	<i>coal, charcoal</i>
дроvá <i>n. pl.</i>	dravá	<i>wood fuel</i>
чернила <i>n. pl.</i>	cherneyila	<i>ink</i>
чернильница <i>f.</i>	cherneyílnyitsa	<i>ink-stand</i>
перó <i>n.</i>	p(y)eró	<i>pen</i>
рúчка <i>f.</i>	rúchka	<i>handle, penholder</i>
карандáшъ <i>m.</i>	karandásh	<i>pencil</i>
бумáга <i>f.</i>	bumága	<i>paper</i>
пoчтóвая бумага <i>f.</i>	pachtóvaya bumága	<i>writing-paper</i>
пропускнаá бумага <i>f.</i>	prapusknáya bumága	<i>blotting-paper</i>
промокáшка <i>f.</i>	pramakáshka	
листъ бумаги <i>m.</i>	lyist bumági	<i>sheet of paper</i>
конвéртъ <i>m.</i>	kanvyéart	<i>envelope</i>
обложка <i>f.</i>	ablóshka	
откры́тка <i>f.</i>	atkrytka	<i>post-card</i>
(пoчтóвая) марка <i>f.</i>	márka	<i>stamp</i>
книга, книжка <i>f.</i>	knyíga, knyíshka	<i>book</i>
(тетráдь) тетráдка <i>f.</i>	tyetrátka	<i>note-book</i>
верёвочка <i>f.</i>	veryóvachka	<i>string</i>
самовáръ <i>m.</i>	samavár	<i>tea-urn</i>
чайникъ <i>m.</i>	cháinyik	<i>tea-pot</i>
чáшка <i>f.</i>	cháshka	<i>cup</i>
блóдечко <i>n.</i>	blyúdyechka	<i>saucer</i>
стакáнъ <i>m.</i>	stakán	<i>tumbler</i>
подстакáнникъ <i>m.</i>	patstakányik	<i>tumbler-stand</i>
лóжка <i>f.</i>	lóshka	<i>spoon</i>

вýлка <i>f.</i>	vílka	<i>fork</i>
ножъ, нόжикъ <i>m.</i>	nózh(yk)	<i>knife</i>
салфётка <i>f.</i>	salfyéatka	<i>napkin</i>
прибрóр <i>m.</i>	pribór	<i>cover</i> (sc. <i>knife and fork</i> )
тарéлка <i>f.</i>	taryéalka	<i>plate</i>
крышка <i>f.</i>	krýshka	<i>lid, cover</i>
блýдо <i>n.</i>	blyúda	<i>dish</i>
графинъ <i>m.</i>	grafín	<i>water-bottle</i>
бутылка <i>f.</i>	butýlka	<i>bottle</i>
рýмка <i>f.</i>	ryúmka	<i>wine-glass</i>
прóбка <i>f.</i>	própká	<i>cork</i>
прóбочникъ <i>m.</i>	próbachnyik	<i>corkscrew</i>

## CHAPTER 11

### VOCABULARY

#### Travel (cf. chapters 47, 48)

граñица <i>f.</i>	granyítsa	<i>frontier</i>
пáспортъ <i>m.</i>	pásport	<i>passport</i>
билéтъ <i>m.</i>	bilyéat	<i>ticket</i>
начáй <i>m.</i>	nachái	<i>tip</i>
носильщикъ <i>m.</i>	nasílshchik	<i>porter</i>
чинóвникъ <i>m.</i>	chinóvnyik	<i>official</i>
полицéйскíй <i>m. adj.</i>	palyitsyéiski	<i>} police (official)</i>
жандáрмъ <i>m.</i>	zhandárm	
городовóй <i>m. adj.</i>	garadavói	<i>(town) policeman</i>
учáстокъ <i>m.</i>	uchástak	<i>police-court</i>
приставъ <i>m.</i>	pŕistaf	<i>commissary of police</i>
дворникъ <i>m.</i>	dvórnyik	<i>concierge</i>
извóщикъ <i>m.</i> (or извóзчикъ)	izvóshchik	<i>cab (driver with carriage or sledge)</i>
шоффéръ <i>m.</i>	shafyór	<i>chauffeur</i>
экипáжъ <i>m.</i>	ekipázh	<i>carriage</i>
сáни <i>f. pl.</i>	sányi	<i>sledge</i>
автомобíль <i>m.</i>	aftamabíl'	<i>motor-car</i>

таксамéтра <i>f.</i>	taksamyéatra	<i>taxi</i>
контóра <i>f.</i>	kantóra	<i>office</i>
дéньги <i>f. pl.</i>	dyéngi	<i>money</i>
размéнь дéнегъ <i>m.</i>	razmyéan dyények	<i>moneychanger's change (from coin)</i>
сдáча <i>f.</i>	sdácha	<i>change (from coin)</i>
мéлочи <i>f. pl.</i>	myéalachí	<i>small change</i>
рубль <i>m.</i>	rubl' (rup)	<i>rouble</i>
цéлкóвый <i>m. adj.</i>	ts(y)elkóvy	<i>rouble (colloq.)</i>
полтина <i>f.</i>	paltyína	$\frac{1}{2}$ <i>rouble</i>
двугрýвенникъ <i>m.</i>	dvugrívenyik	20 <i>kopeks</i>
грýвенникъ <i>m.</i>	grívenyik	10 <i>kopeks</i>
копéйка <i>f.</i>	kapyéika	<i>kopek</i> (= $\frac{1}{4}d.$ )
бумáжка <i>f.</i>	bumáshka	<i>note</i>
пóездъ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	póyezd, payezdá	<i>train(s)</i>
вагóнь <i>m.</i>	vagón	<i>railway-carriage</i>
классъ <i>m.</i>	klass	<i>class</i>
купé <i>n. indecl.</i>	kup(y)é	<i>} compartment</i>
отдélénie <i>n.</i>	atdyelyéiniye	
коридóръ <i>m.</i>	karidór	<i>corridor</i>
кондúкторъ <i>m.</i>	kandúktar	<i>guard</i>
убóрная <i>f. adj.</i>	ubórnaya	<i>toilet</i>
отоплéние <i>n.</i>	ataplyéiniye	<i>heating</i>
освéщéние <i>n.</i>	asvyeshchéniye	<i>lighting</i>
спáльный вагóнь <i>m.</i>	spáll'ny	<i>sleeping-car</i>
постéль <i>f.</i>	pastyéll'	<i>bedding</i>
вагóнь-ресторáнъ <i>m.</i>	restaráń	<i>dining-car</i>
платфóрма <i>f.</i>	platfórmá	<i>platform</i>
багáжъ <i>m.</i>	bagázh	<i>luggage</i>
гардерóбъ <i>m.</i>	garderóp	<i>cloak-room</i>
ка́сса <i>f.</i>	kása	<i>ticket-office</i>
квитáнциа <i>f.</i>	kvitántsiya	<i>receipt</i>
ключъ <i>m.</i>	klyuch	<i>key</i>
дорóга <i>f.</i>	daróga	<i>road</i>
желéзная д. <i>f.</i>	zhelyéaznaya	<i>railroad (lit. iron)</i>
путь <i>m.</i>	put'	<i>way, means</i>
трамвáй <i>m.</i>	tramvái	<i>tram</i>
колесо <i>n.</i>	kalyesó	<i>wheel</i>
вещь <i>f.</i>	vyéishch	<i>thing</i>

цѣнá <i>f.</i>	ts(y)ená	<i>price</i>
счѣть <i>m.</i>	schot	<i>bill</i>
итбгъ <i>m.</i>	itók	<i>total</i>
нбмеръ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	nóm(y)er	<i>number</i> (e. g. of room, <i>ticket</i> , or <i>newspaper</i> ), often = <i>room</i>
вѣсь <i>m.</i>	vyéas	<i>weight</i>
фунтъ <i>m.</i>	funt	<i>pound</i> ( <i>weight</i> )
пудъ <i>m.</i>	put	<i>pud</i> , 40 <i>Russian lbs.</i>
верстá <i>f.</i>	v(y)erstá	<i>verst</i> , $\frac{2}{3}$ of a mile
сажень <i>f.</i>	sázhén'	<i>fathom</i>
футъ <i>m.</i>	fut	<i>foot</i> ( <i>measure</i> )
начало <i>n.</i>	nachála	<i>beginning</i>
середи́на <i>f.</i>	seredyína	<i>middle</i>
коне́цъ <i>m.</i>	kanyéats	<i>end</i>
зблото <i>n.</i>	zólata	<i>gold</i>
серебрó <i>n.</i>	serebró	<i>silver</i>
мѣдь <i>f.</i>	myéit'	<i>copper</i>
желѣзо <i>n.</i>	zhelyéza	<i>iron</i>
сталь <i>f.</i>	stáil'	<i>steel</i>
пристань <i>f.</i>	prístan'	<i>landing-stage</i>
купалъня <i>f.</i>	kupáil'nya	<i>bathing place</i>
парохбдъ <i>m.</i>	parakhót	<i>steamer</i>
лодка <i>f.</i>	lótka	<i>rowing boat</i>
каюта <i>f.</i>	kayúta	<i>cabin</i>
палуба <i>f.</i>	páluba	<i>deck</i>
море <i>n.</i>	mórye	<i>sea</i>
озеро <i>n.</i>	óz(y)era	<i>lake</i>
рѣка <i>f.</i>	r(y)eká	<i>river</i>
бѣстровъ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	óstraf, astravá	<i>island(s)</i>
гора́ <i>f.</i> , горы <i>pl.</i>	gará, góry	<i>hill(s), mountain(s)</i>
лѣсь (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	lyéas, lyesá	<i>forest(s)</i>
поле <i>n.</i>	pólye	<i>field, open country</i>
лугъ <i>m.</i>	luk	<i>meadow</i>
степь <i>f.</i>	styéip'	<i>steppe</i>
бѣрегъ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	b(y)éirek	<i>shore(s), bank(s)</i>
заливъ <i>m.</i>	zalyíf	<i>gulf</i>
видъ <i>m.</i>	vit	<i>view</i>

гóродъ (-á) <i>m.</i> ( <i>pl.</i> )	górat	<i>town(s)</i>
столи́ца <i>f.</i>	stalyítsa	<i>capital</i>
мѣсто <i>n.</i>	myéasta	<i>place</i> (cf. pp. 67, 112)
край <i>m.</i>	krai	<i>region</i>
странá <i>f.</i>	straná	<i>country</i>
губéрнія <i>f.</i>	gub(y)éirniya	<i>province</i>
область <i>f.</i>	oblást'	
у́ездъ <i>m.</i>	uyéazd	<i>district</i>
сторонá <i>f.</i>	starana	<i>side</i>
нарódъ <i>m.</i>	narót	<i>people</i>
село <i>n.</i>	s(y)eló	<i>village</i>
дерéвня <i>f.</i>	dyer(y)éivnya	<i>hamlet, 'the country'</i>
имѣніе <i>n.</i>	imyéiniye	<i>property</i>
телегráфъ <i>m.</i>	tyelyegráf	<i>telegraph office</i>
телефónъ <i>m.</i>	tyelyefón	<i>telephone</i>
телегráмма <i>f.</i>	tyelyegrámma	<i>telegram</i>
письмо <i>n.</i>	pis'mó	<i>letter</i>
дѣло <i>n.</i>	dyéala	<i>business, affair</i>
рабóта <i>f.</i>	rabóta	<i>work</i>
слúчай <i>m.</i>	slúchai	<i>incident</i>
обычай <i>m.</i>	abýchai	<i>custom</i> (sc. <i>habit</i> )

## CHAPTER 12

## VOCABULARY

## Time, weather, &amp;c.

врёмя	vr(y)éimya	<i>time</i>
порá <i>f.</i>	pará	<i>(it is) time</i>
разъ <i>m.</i>	ras	<i>a time</i>
годъ <i>m.</i>	got	<i>year</i>
мѣсяцъ <i>m.</i>	myéisyats	<i>month, moon</i>
недѣля <i>f.</i>	nyedyéilya	<i>week</i>
день <i>m.</i>	dyéin'	<i>day</i>
сútки <i>f. pl.</i>	sútki	<i>24 hours</i>
ночь <i>n.</i>	nóich'	<i>night</i>

у́тро <i>n.</i>	útra	<i>morning</i>
вéчеръ <i>m.</i>	v(y)éicher	<i>evening</i>
зарý <i>f.</i>	zaryá	<i>dawn</i>
часъ <i>m.</i>	chas	<i>hour</i>
часы <i>m. pl.</i>	chasý	<i>watch, clock (and hours)</i>
минута <i>f.</i>	minútä	<i>minute</i>
янвáрь <i>m.</i>	yanváir'	<i>January</i>
феврáль <i>m.</i>	fevráil'	<i>February</i>
мартъ <i>m.</i>	mart	<i>March</i>
апрéль <i>m.</i>	apr(y)éil'	<i>April</i>
май <i>m.</i>	mai	<i>May</i>
и́йнь <i>m.</i>	iyún'	<i>June</i>
и́йоль <i>m.</i>	iyúl'	<i>July</i>
áвгустъ <i>m.</i>	ávgust	<i>August</i>
сентябрь <i>m.</i>	s(y)entyáibr'	<i>September</i>
октябрь <i>m.</i>	aktyáibr'	<i>October</i>
ноябрь <i>m.</i>	nayáibr'	<i>November</i>
декáбрь <i>m.</i>	dyekáibr'	<i>December</i>
Воскресéнье <i>n.</i>	vaskres(y)éinye	<i>Sunday</i>
понедéльникъ <i>m.</i>	panyedyélnik	<i>Monday</i>
втóрникъ <i>m.</i>	ftórnyik	<i>Tuesday</i>
средá <i>f.</i>	sredá	<i>Wednesday</i>
четвéргъ <i>m.</i>	chetv(y)éirk	<i>Thursday</i>
пятница <i>f.</i>	pyátnyitsa	<i>Friday</i>
суббóта <i>f.</i>	subóta	<i>Saturday</i>
прáздникъ <i>m.</i>	prázdnyik	<i>holiday, festival</i>
веснá <i>f.</i>	v(y)esná	<i>spring</i>
лéто <i>n.</i>	lyéata	<i>summer (and year)</i>
осень <i>f.</i>	ós(y)en'	<i>autumn</i>
зимá <i>f.</i>	zimá	<i>winter</i>
погóда <i>f.</i>	pagóda	<i>weather</i>
дождь <i>m.</i>	dóizhd'	<i>rain</i>
снéгъ <i>m.</i>	snyéak	<i>snow</i>
морóзъ <i>m.</i>	marós	<i>frost</i>
оттепель <i>f.</i>	óttyepel'	<i>thaw</i>
слíкоть <i>f.</i>	slyákat'	<i>slush</i>
грязь <i>f.</i>	gryáis'	<i>mud</i>
пыль <i>f.</i>	pyl'	<i>dust</i>

вѣтеръ <i>m.</i>	v(y)étyer	<i>wind</i>
туманъ <i>m.</i>	tumán	<i>fog</i>
солнце <i>n.</i>	sóntse (л is mute)	<i>sun</i>
лунá <i>f.</i>	luná	<i>moon</i>
звѣздá ( <i>pl.</i> звѣ- зды) <i>f.</i>	zv(y)ezdá, zvyózdy	<i>star(s)</i>
свѣтъ <i>m.</i>	svyéat	<i>light, world</i>
миръ <i>m.</i>	mir	<i>world, community</i>
земля <i>f.</i>	zemlyá	<i>earth</i>
темнота <i>f.</i>	tyemnatá	<i>darkness</i>
нѣбо <i>n.</i>	nyéaba	<i>sky, heaven</i>
облачо <i>n.</i>	oblaka	
туча <i>f.</i>	túcha	<i>} cloud</i>

## CHAPTER 13

## VOCABULARY

Points of the compass and names of countries, nationalities,  
towns, rivers and personal names

сѣверъ	s(y)éiver	<i>North</i>
югъ	yuk	<i>South</i>
востоκъ	vastók	<i>East</i>
западъ	zápat	<i>West</i>
сѣверный	s(y)éverny	<i>Northern</i>
южный	yúzhny	<i>Southern</i>
восточный	vastóchny	<i>Eastern</i>
западный	západny	<i>Western</i>
центральный	tsentráil'ny	<i>Central</i>
Европа	yevrópa	<i>Europe</i>
Азія	áziya	<i>Asia</i>
Африка	áfrika	<i>Africa</i>
Австралія	afstráliya	<i>Australia</i>
Америка	am(y)érika	<i>America</i>

Австрія	áfstriya	<i>Austria</i>
Áнглія	ángliya	<i>England</i>
Бéльгія	b(y)élgiya	<i>Belgium</i>
Болгáрія	balgáriya	<i>Bulgaria</i>
Вéнгрія	v(y)éngriya	<i>Hungary</i>
Гермáнія	g(y)ermániya	<i>Germany</i>
Голлáндія	galándiya	<i>Holland</i>
Грéція	gr(y)éitsiya	<i>Greece</i>
Дáнія	dániya	<i>Denmark</i>
Ирлáндія	irlándiya	<i>Ireland</i>
Испáнія	ispániya	<i>Spain</i>
Итáлія	ítaliya	<i>Italy</i>
Китáй	kitái	<i>China</i>
Норвéгія	narv(y)égiya	<i>Norway</i>
Россíя	rassíya	<i>Russia</i>
Румýнія	rumýniya	<i>Roumania</i>
Сéрбія	s(y)érbiya	<i>Serbia</i>
Соединённые Штáты	sayedyinyóny-yeshtáty	<i>United States</i>
Тýрція	túrtsiya	<i>Turkey</i>
Финлáндія	finlyándiya	<i>Finland</i>
Франція	frántsiya	<i>France</i>
Черногóрія	chernagóriya	<i>Montenegro</i>
Швейцáрія	shveitsáriya	<i>Switzerland</i>
Швéція	shv(y)étsiya	<i>Sweden</i>
Шотлáндія	shatlándiya	<i>Scotland</i>
Япóнія	yapóniya	<i>Japan</i>

## MASC.

австрíецъ  
америкáнецъ  
англичáнинъ  
армянíнъ  
бельгíеецъ  
болгáринъ  
венгréеецъ  
грекъ  
грузíйнецъ

## FEM.

австрíйка  
америкáнка  
англичáнка  
армýнка  
бельгíйка  
болгárка  
венгérка  
гречáнка  
грузíйнка

*Austrian*  
*American*  
*Englishman, -woman*  
*Armenian*  
*Belgian*  
*Bulgarian*  
*Hungarian*  
*Greek*  
*Georgian*

## 50      GEOGRAPHY AND NOMENCLATURE

голлáндецъ	голлáндка	<i>Dutchman</i>
датчáнинъ	датчáнка	<i>Dane</i>
евréй	евréйка	<i>Jew</i>
ирлáндецъ	ирлáндка	<i>Irishman</i>
испáнецъ	испáнка	<i>Spaniard</i>
италья́нецъ	италья́нка	<i>Italian</i>
китáеца	китáянка	<i>Chinaman</i>
норвéжецъ	норвéжка	<i>Norwegian</i>
нéмецъ	нéмка	<i>German</i>
полáкъ	полька	<i>Pole</i>
рýсский ( <i>adj.</i> )	рýссская ( <i>adj.</i> )	<i>Russian</i>
сербъ	сербíйнка	<i>Serb</i>
татáринъ	татárка	<i>Tartar</i>
тýрокъ	турчáнка	<i>Turk</i>
францúэзъ	францúженка	<i>Frenchman</i>
финлáндецъ	финлáндка	<i>Finn</i>
черногóрецъ	черногóрка	<i>Montenegrin</i>
черкéсь	черкéска	<i>Circassian</i>
чехъ	чéшка	<i>Chekh, Bohemian</i>
швейцáрецъ	швейцáрка	<i>Swiss</i>
шведъ	швéдка	<i>Swede</i>
шотлáндецъ	шотлáндка	<i>Scot</i>
японецъ	японка	<i>Japanese</i>
англичáне	англичáнки	
нéмцы	нéмки	
сéрбы	сербíйнки	
францúзы	францúженки	
рýсские ( <i>adj.</i> )	рýсския ( <i>adj.</i> )	
полáки	польки	
тýрки	турчáнки	
евréи	евréйки	
татáры	татáрки	
христíянинъ	<i>pl.</i> христíяне	<i>Christian</i>
язычникъ	<i>pl.</i> язычники	<i>heathen</i>
правослáвный	<i>pl.</i> правослáвные	<i>Orthodox</i>
катóликъ	<i>pl.</i> катóлики	<i>Roman Catholic</i>

PLURALS

## Towns, rivers, &amp;c.

## MASC.

Берлінъ	berlyín	<i>Berlin</i>
Бѣлградъ	b(y)elgrát	<i>Belgrade</i>
Днѣпръ	dnyé <sup>a</sup> pr	<i>Dnieper</i>
Кавказъ	kafkás	<i>Caucasus</i>
Кембриджъ	—	<i>Cambridge</i>
Кіевъ	kíyef	<i>Kiev</i>
Крымъ	krym	<i>Crimea</i>
Лондонъ	—	<i>London</i>
Нью-Йоркъ	—	<i>New York</i>
Оксфордъ	—	<i>Oxford</i>
Паріжъ	parízh	<i>Paris</i>
Петроградъ	p(y)etragrát	<i>Petrograd</i>
Римъ	rim	<i>Rome</i>
Ростовъ	rastóf	<i>Rostov</i>
Харьковъ	há <sup>i</sup> rkaf	<i>Harkov</i>
Севастополь	sevastópal'	<i>Sebastopol</i>
Ярославль	yaraslávl'	<i>Yaroslav</i>

## FEM.

Аѳіны <i>pl.</i>	afíny	<i>Athens</i>
Варшава	varsháva	<i>Warsaw</i>
Волга	vólga	<i>Volga</i>
Вѣна	vyé <sup>a</sup> na	<i>Vienna</i>
Москвѣ	maskvá	<i>Moscow</i>
Невѣ	nyevá	<i>Neva</i>
Одѣсса	adyé <sup>a</sup> sa	<i>Odessa</i>
Рига	ríga	<i>Riga</i>
Тѣмза	tyé <sup>a</sup> mza	<i>Thames</i>
Ялта	yálta	<i>Yalta</i>
Астрахань	ástrakhan'	<i>Astrakhan</i>
Казань	kazá <sup>i</sup> n'	<i>Kazan</i>
Обѣ	óip'	<i>Obi</i>
Рязань	ryazá <sup>i</sup> n'	<i>Ryazan</i>
Сибирь	sibir'	<i>Siberia</i>
Тверь	tv(y)éir'	<i>Tver</i>

### Christian Names

Алекса́ндръ	alyeksándr	<i>Alexander</i>
Алекса́й	alyeksyéi	<i>Alexis</i>
Васи́лій.	vasilyi	<i>Basil</i>
Влади́міръ	vladýimir	<i>Vladimir</i>
Гео́ргій	g(y)eórgi	
Его́ръ	yegór	<i>George</i>
Ю́рій	yúri	
Ива́нь	iván	<i>John</i>
Миха́йль	mikhayíl	<i>Michael</i>
Никола́й	nyikalái	<i>Nicholas</i>
Па́велъ	páv(y)el	<i>Paul</i>
Пётръ	pyotr	<i>Peter</i>
Сергéй	s(y)ergyéi	<i>Sergius</i>
Тёдоръ	fyódar	<i>Theodore</i>

(For the diminutives of these names cf. p. 33.)

Алекса́ндра	alyeksándra	<i>Alexandra</i>
Áнна	ánnna	<i>Anne</i>
Екатерíна	yekatyerína	<i>Catherine</i>
Еле́на	yelyé <sup>a</sup> na	<i>Helen</i>
Елизавéта	yelyizavyé <sup>a</sup> ta	<i>Elizabeth</i>
Мáрія	máriya	<i>Mary</i>
Сóфія	sófiya	<i>Sophia</i>
Татиáна	tatiyána	<i>Tatiana</i>

And the very common diminutives :

Анóта	anyútá	<i>Anne</i>
Кáтя	kátya	<i>Catherine</i>
Лéночка	lyé <sup>a</sup> nachka	<i>Helen</i>
Лíза	lyíza	<i>Elizabeth</i>
Мáша	másha	<i>Mary</i>
Сáшенька	sáshenka	<i>Alexandra</i>
Сóня	sónya	<i>Sophia</i>
Тáня	tanya	<i>Tatiana</i>

**Patronymic**

Алексáндровичъ	alyeksándravich	<i>Alexander's son</i>
Алексéевичъ	alyeksyéyevich	<i>Alexis' son</i>
Васíліевичъ	vasíliyevich	<i>Basil's son</i>
Владíмировичъ	vladyímiravich	<i>Vladimir's son</i>
Геóргиевичъ <i>or</i> Егóровичъ	g(y)eórgiyevich yegórovich	<i>George's son</i>
ор Йóриевичъ	yúriyevich	
Ивáновичъ <i>or</i> Ивáнычъ	ivánavich iványeh	<i>John's son</i>
Михáйловичъ <i>or</i> Михáйлычъ	mikhayílavich mikháilych	<i>Michael's son</i>
Николáевичъ <i>or</i> Николáичъ	nyikaláyevich nyikaláyich	<i>Nicholas' son</i>
Пáвловичъ	pávlavich	<i>Paul's son</i>
Петróвичъ	petróvich	<i>Peter's son</i>
Сергéевичъ <i>or</i> Сергéичъ	s(y)ergyéyevich s(y)ergyéyich	<i>Sergius' son</i>
Ѳёдоровичъ	fyódaravich	<i>Theodore's son</i>
Алексáндровна		<i>Alexander's daughter</i>
Алексéевна		<i>Alexis' daughter</i>
Васíліевна		<i>Basil's daughter</i>
Владíмировна		<i>Vladimir's daughter</i>
Геóргиевна, &c.		<i>George's daughter</i>
Ивáновна		<i>John's daughter</i>
Михáйловна		<i>Michael's daughter</i>
Николáевна		<i>Nicholas' daughter</i>
Пáвловна		<i>Paul's daughter</i>
Петróвна		<i>Peter's daughter</i>
Сергéевна		<i>Sergius' daughter</i>
Ѳёдоровна		<i>Theodore's daughter</i>

In ordinarily rapid speech the patronymics both *masc.* and *fem.* are always curtailed, the syllable -ов-, -ев- being usually inaudible except when accented, as *Петróвичъ*.

**Surnames****MASC.**

Лéрмонтовъ	lyé <sup>a</sup> rmantaf	<i>Lérmontov</i>
Соловьёвъ	salavyóf	<i>Solovév</i>
Тургéневъ	turg(y)é <sup>i</sup> nyef	<i>Turgénev</i>
Пúшкинъ	púshkin	<i>Púshkin</i>

**FEM.**

Пáвлова	pávlova	<i>Pávlova</i>
Арсéньева	ars(y)é <sup>i</sup> nyeva	<i>Arséneva</i>
Карсáвина	karsávina	<i>Karsávina</i>

**Note on the use of personal names in Russian**  
Russians possess three names :

1. The Christian name (*íмя, neut.*).
2. The Patronymic (*бтчество*).
3. The Surname (*фамíлія*). ·

The patronymic always varies according to gender, and in almost all cases the surname does also. If a man's name is Ивáнь, his father's name Пётръ, and his surname Арсéньевъ, then his full name will be :

Ивáнь Петróвичъ Арсéньевъ.

If his wife's name is А́нна, and her father's name was Павель, her name will be :

А́нна Пáвловна Арсéньева.

Together they are Арсéньевы.

Their son will be Ивáновичъ, e.g. :

Сергéй Ивáновичъ Арсéньевъ,

and their daughter Ивáновна, e.g. :

Мáрія Ивáновна Арсéньева.

Russians call each other, unless they are relations or intimate friends, by the Christian name and the patronymic.

CHAPTER 14

## THE NOMINATIVE

## Pronouns

All the essential pronouns are given in the following list, in the nominative singular and nominative plural, with the pronunciation :

я	ya	= <i>I</i>
ты	ty	= <i>thou</i>
онъ	on	= <i>he</i>
онó	anó	= <i>it</i>
онá	aná	= <i>she</i>

мы	my	= <i>we</i>
вы	vy	= <i>you</i>
они́	anyí	= <i>they</i> (masc. and neut.)
они́́	anyé	= <i>they</i> (fem.)

Masc. мой	moi	мой
Neut. моё	mayó	
Fem. мой	mayá	

Masc. твой	tvoi	твой	tvayí =thy
Neut. твоё	tvayó		
Fem. твой	tvayá		

Masc. напъ	nash	нáши    náshy = our
Neut. нáшe	náshe	
Fem. нáшa	násha	

## SINGULAR

## PLURAL

Masc.	вашъ	vash	}	вáши	váshy = <i>your</i>
Neut.	бáше	váshe			
Fem.	бáша	vásha			

Masc.	свой	svoi	}	свой	svayí = <i>one's own</i> <sup>1</sup>
Neut.	своё	svayó			
Fem.	свой	svayá			

Masc.	кто	khto = <i>who</i>
Fem.		

(can be used for either singular or plural)

Neut. что shto = *what*

## SINGULAR

## PLURAL

Masc.	чей	chéi	}	чyi	chyí = <i>whose</i>
Neut.	чье	chyó			
Fem.	чья	chyá			

Masc.	оди́нь	adyín	}	одни́	adnyí	= { <i>one</i> <i>alone</i> <i>only</i> <i>some</i> }
Neut.	одно	adnó				
Fem.	одна	adná				

Masc.	самъ	sam	}	сáми	sámi	= { <i>self</i> <i>selves</i> }
Neut.	само	samó				
Fem.	самá	samá				

<sup>1</sup> This pronoun is always used with reference to the subject of the sentence ; it may mean *my own*, *thy own*, *his own*, *her own*, *our own*, *your own*, or *their own* ; for the ordinary words for *his*, *her*, and *their* see p. 105.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
Masc. <i>этотъ</i>	<i>é'tot</i>	<i>éти</i>	<i>this, or that</i> <i>these, or those</i> <i>the latter</i>
Neut. <i>это</i>	<i>é'ta</i>		
Fem. <i>эта</i>	<i>é'a ta</i>		
Masc. <i>тотъ</i>	<i>tot</i>	<i>tъ</i>	<i>that yonder</i> <i>those yonder</i> <i>the former</i>
Neut. <i>то</i>	<i>to</i>		
Fem. <i>та</i>	<i>ta</i>		
Masc. <i>весь</i>	<i>vyé's</i>	<i>всъ</i>	<i>the whole</i> <i>all</i>
Neut. <i>всё</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>fsyó</i>		
Fem. <i>вся</i>	<i>fsyá</i>		

## CHAPTER 15

### VOCABULARY OF WORDS DENOTING MALE AND FEMALE BEINGS

отéцъ	<i>atyé'ats</i>	<i>father</i>
бáтишка <sup>2</sup>	<i>bátyushka</i>	
пáпа, папáша		
мать	<i>maít'</i>	<i>mother</i>
мáтушка	<i>mátushka</i>	
мáма, мамáша		

Отецъ and мать are the formal words for *father* and *mother*; they are used in literature, in narration, and in conversation by younger people to older.

<sup>1</sup> This word is very often used adverbially with the meaning *continually, nothing but, keeps on. . .*

<sup>2</sup> The plurals бáтишки and мáтушки are only used as exclamations of intense surprise or horror

Бáтюшка and мáтушка are used by older people to younger, in addressing peasants and people of the working class, and by these latter in addressing educated people ; the former is also used in addressing priests.

The four last names are those most used by children of and to their parents and by grown-up strangers to children of their parents.

родíтели	radyítelyi	<i>parents</i>
дѣдъ	dyéat	
дѣдушка	dyéadushka	<i>grandfather</i>
бáбушка	bábushka	<i>grandmother</i>
сынъ	syn	
сынóкъ (dim.)	synók	<i>son</i>
дочь	dóich'	
дóчка (dim.)	dóchka	<i>daughter</i>

Дóчка is much more frequently used than сынóкъ ; дóчка is the ordinary word for *daughter*, and сынъ for *son*.

внукъ	vnuik	
внúчекъ (dim.)	vnúchek	<i>grandson</i>
внúчка	vnúchka	<i>granddaughter</i>
брать	brat	<i>brother</i>
сестrá	s(y)estrá	<i>sister</i>
дáдя	dyádfa	<i>uncle</i>
тётя	tyótya	<i>aunt</i>
дитá	dyityá	<i>child</i>
дѣти	dyéityi	<i>children</i>
ребёнокъ	rebyónak	<i>child</i>
ребáта	rebyáta	<i>children</i>

In ordinary conversation ребёнокъ and дѣти are most often used for *child* and *children*; дитя is common in literature; ребѧта is very commonly used in the non-literal sense, as ‘*boys*’ in English, e.g. amongst soldiers.

Дитя is always neuter and ребёнокъ always masculine whatever the sex of the child.

мужъ	muzh	}	<i>husband</i>
супрѹгъ	suprúk		
женá	zhená	}	<i>wife</i>
супрѹга	suprúga		

Супрѹгъ and супрѹга are the terms of polite reference most often used amongst friends and acquaintances after the pronoun *your*; мужъ and женá are those used amongst relations, and otherwise always when referring to people not actually present.

женихъ	zhenyíkh	<i>fiancé</i>
невѣста	nyevyéasta	<i>fiancée</i>
другъ	druk	<i>friend</i> (masc. or fem.)
товарищъ	tavárishch	<i>companion</i> (masc.)

Другъ can refer to either sex; there is a word подруга for female friend, but it means rather a *girl-companion*; if a specifically male or female friend is indicated the following words must be used :

приятель	priyátyel'	<i>friend</i> (masc.)
приятельница	priyátyelnyitsa	<i>friend</i> (fem.)

## 60 MALE AND FEMALE DESIGNATIONS

учитель	uchítel'	<i>teacher</i> (masc.)
учительница	uchítelynyaitsa	<i>teacher</i> (fem.)
ученикъ	ucheník	<i>pupil</i> (masc.)
ученица	uchenýtsa	<i>pupil</i> (fem.)
господи́нъ	gaspadyín	<i>Mr., gentleman</i>
госпожа	gaspazhá	<i>Mrs., Miss</i>
дáма	dáma	<i>lady</i>
господá pl.	gaspadá	<i>Messrs. or Mr. and Mrs.</i>
бáринъ	bárin	<i>the gentleman, the master</i>
бáрыня	bárynya	<i>the lady, the mistress</i>
бáрышня	báryshnya	<i>the young lady</i>
слугá	slugá	<i>male servant</i>
прислúга	prislúga	<i>female servant</i>
гóрничная <i>adj.</i>	górnichnaya	<i>maid</i>
хозяинъ	(k)hazyáyin	<i>host, master</i>
хозяйка	(k)hazyáiika	<i>hostess, mistress</i>
хозяева pl.	(k)hazyáyeva	<i>host and hostess</i>
попъ <sup>1</sup>	pop	<i>priest</i>
попадьá <sup>1</sup>	papadyá	<i>priest's wife</i>
царь	tsá'r'	<i>tsar</i>
цари́ца	tsarítsa	<i>tsaritsa</i>
цесарéвичъ	tsesar(y)évich	<i>tsesarévich</i> ( <i>eldest son, Crown Prince</i> )
царéвичъ	tsar(y)évich	<i>tsarévich</i> ( <i>any other son of Tsar</i> )

<sup>1</sup> More respectfully: свящéнникъ (svyashchényik) and женá свящéнника.

Госудáрь <sup>1</sup>	gasudáir'	<i>the Sovereign, the Tsar</i>
Госудáрыня <sup>1</sup>	gasudárynya	<i>the Sovereign, the Tsar-itsa</i>
Имперáторъ	imperátor	<i>the Emperor</i>
Императríца	imperatrítsa	<i>the Empress</i>
Наслéдникъ	naslyéidnyik	<i>the Heir-Apparent</i>
корóль	karóil'	<i>king</i>
королéва	karalyéava	<i>queen</i>
князь	knyáis'	<i>Prince</i>
княгíня	knyaghínya	<i>Princess (wife)</i>
княжná	knyazhná	<i>Princess (daughter)</i>
Велíкій Князь	velyíki k.	<i>Grand Duke</i>
Велíкая Княгíня	velyíkaya k.	<i>Grand Duchess</i>
графъ	graf	<i>Count</i>
графíня	grafínya	<i>Countess</i>
мáльчикъ	máil'chik	<i>boy</i>
пáренъ	páren'	<i>lad</i>
человéкъ	chelavyéak	<i>man</i>
старíкъ	starík	<i>old man</i>
дéвочка	dyéavachka	<i>little girl (till about 13)</i>
дéвшка	dyéavushka	<i>girl (from 13 till about 25)</i>
дéвíца	dyevítsa	<i>spinster</i>
жéнщина	zhénshchina	<i>woman</i>
старúха	starúkha	<i>old woman</i>

<sup>1</sup> сúдарь and судáрыня are the old words for *Sir* and *Madam*.

Человѣкъ is the ordinary word for *man*, but its real meaning is *human being*, and thus it can also be used with reference to women, e.g. :

она несчастный человѣкъ  
*she is an unfortunate person.*

The plural of человѣкъ is люди, which includes both men and women. Человѣкъ is also used for *waiter*. Жѣнщина is the ordinary word for *woman*. Мужчина (also spelt мужчина) is the specific word for *man* as opposed to *woman*.

Мужикъ = *a male peasant*, баба = *a female peasant*.

Бабы is colloquially used for *womenfolk*. Other equally common and rather more respectful terms for the peasants are :

крестьянинъ = *peasant man*  
крестьянка = *peasant woman*  
крестьяне = *peasants*.

## CHAPTER 16

### EXAMPLES OF PRONOUNS USED IN AGREEMENT WITH NOUNS

мой отѣцъ	= <i>my father</i>
моя мать	= <i>my mother</i>
мои родители	= <i>my parents</i>
вашъ батюшка	= <i>your father</i>
ваша матушка	= <i>your mother</i>
ваши дѣти	= <i>your children</i>

нашъ сынъ	= <i>our son</i>
наша дочка	= <i>our daughter</i>
наши дѣти	= <i>our children</i>
твой братъ	= <i>thy brother</i>
твой сестрѣ	= <i>thy sister</i>
твой родители	= <i>thy parents</i>

Obs. твой is used in the same way as ты : cf. p. 17.

N.B. The words мой and твой are diphthongs pronounced *moi* and *tvoi*; the words мой and твой are each of two syllables and are pronounced *ma-yi*, *tva-yi*.

какъ вѣши родители ?	= <i>how are your parents ?</i>
они здѣровы	= <i>they are well</i>
какъ вѣшъ братъ ?	= <i>how is your brother ?</i>
онъ здѣробъ	= <i>he is well</i>
какъ вѣша дочка ?	= <i>how is your daughter ?</i>
она здѣроба	= <i>she is well</i>
какъ твой дѣти ?	= <i>how are thy children ?</i>
они болѣны	= <i>they are ill</i>
какъ твой сынъ ?	= <i>how is thy son ?</i>
онъ боленъ	= <i>he is ill</i>
какъ твой дочка ?	= <i>how is thy daughter ?</i>
она болѣна	= <i>she is ill</i>
мой дѣдушка бочень боленъ	= <i>my grandfather is very ill</i>
мой бабушка бочень больна	= <i>my grandmother is very ill</i>
вѣшъ батюшка нездоробъ ?	= <i>is your father unwell ?</i>
вѣша матушка нездороба ?	= <i>is your mother unwell ?</i>
твой папа довблень ?	= <i>is thy father pleased ?</i>
твой мама довольна ?	= <i>is thy mother pleased ?</i>
мой родители очень довольны	= <i>my parents are very much pleased</i>

## 64 PRONOUNS WITH SUBSTANTIVES

вáши дéти бчень счáстливы	= <i>your children are very happy</i>
твой родíтели бчень недовóльны	= <i>thy parents are much annoyed</i>
мой дáдя здéсь	= <i>my uncle is here</i>
мо́й тётя тамъ	= <i>my aunt is there</i>
гдé вáши родíтели ?	= <i>where are your parents ?</i>
мой родíтели дóма	= <i>my parents are at home</i>
воть нáши дéти	= <i>here are our children</i>
воть мой сынъ	= <i>here is my son</i>
воть мо́й дóчка	= <i>here is my daughter</i>
воть мой женихъ	= <i>here is my fiancé</i>
воть мой невéста	= <i>here is my fiancée</i>
гдe вaшъ супрúгъ ?	= <i>where is your husband ?</i>
мой мужъ тутъ	= <i>my husband is here</i>
гдe вáша супрúга ?	= <i>where is your wife ?</i>
мо́й женá дóма	= <i>my wife is at home</i>
это мой внуkъ	= <i>this is my grandson</i>
это мо́й внúчка	= <i>this is my granddaughter</i>
этó мой дéти	= <i>these are my children</i>
гдe вaшъ домъ ?	= <i>where is your house ?</i>
гдe домъ ?	= <i>where is the house ?</i>
воть домъ	= <i>there is (here is) the house</i>
воть нашъ домъ	= <i>there is (here is) our house</i>
этó вaшъ домъ ?	= <i>is this your house ?</i>
да, этó мой домъ	= <i>yes, that is my house</i>
нéть, этó не мой домъ	= <i>no, that is not my house</i>
какъ вaшъ áдресъ ?	= <i>what (lit. how) is your address ?</i>
воть мой áдресъ	= <i>this is my address</i>

моё мѣсто	= <i>my place</i>
твоё мѣсто	= <i>thy place</i>
нашѣ имѣніе	= <i>our property</i>
вашѣ мѣсто	= <i>your place</i>
наши мѣста	= <i>our places</i>
ваші мѣста	= <i>your places</i>
весь домъ	= <i>the whole house</i>
весь го́родъ	= <i>the whole town</i>
вся є́лица	= <i>the whole street</i>
вся кварты́ра	= <i>the whole flat</i>
вся деревня	= <i>the whole hamlet</i>
всё селó	= <i>the whole village</i>
всё по́ле	= <i>the whole field</i>
всѣ извѣщики	= <i>all the cabs</i>
всѣ дома	= <i>all the houses</i>
всѣ го́рода	= <i>all the towns</i>
всѣ є́лицы	= <i>all the streets</i>
всѣ кварты́ры	= <i>all the flats</i>
всѣ деревни	= <i>all the hamlets</i>
всѣ мѣста	= <i>all the places</i>
всѣ сёла	= <i>all the villages</i>
всѣ поля	= <i>all the fields</i>
этотъ домъ	= <i>this house</i>
этотъ человѣкъ	= <i>this man</i>
этотъ господинъ	= <i>this gentleman</i>
эта жѣнщина	= <i>this woman</i>
эта дама	= <i>this lady</i>
эта барышня	= <i>this young lady</i>
это мѣсто	= <i>this place</i>
этотъ мальчикъ	= <i>this boy</i>

э́тотъ ребёнокъ	= <i>this child</i>
э́та дѣвочка	= <i>this little girl</i>
э́та дѣвушка	= <i>this girl</i>
э́то дитя́	= <i>this child</i>
э́ти домá	= <i>these houses</i>
э́ти дѣти	= <i>these children</i>
э́ти мѣстá	= <i>these places</i>
э́ти люди	= <i>these people</i>
э́ти мáльчики	= <i>these boys</i>
э́ти дѣвочки	= <i>these little girls</i>
э́ти дѣвушки	= <i>these girls</i>
э́ти жéнщины	= <i>these women</i>
э́тотъ мущíна	= <i>this man</i>
э́ти мущíны	= <i>these men</i>
э́тотъ мужикъ	= <i>this peasant man</i>
э́ти мужики	= <i>these peasant men</i>
э́та бáба	= <i>this peasant woman</i>
э́ти бáбы	= <i>these peasant women</i>
э́ти господá	= <i>these gentlemen (or ladies and gentlemen)</i>
э́ти дáмы	= <i>these ladies</i>
э́ти бáрышни	= <i>these young ladies</i>
тотъ домъ	= <i>that house yonder (or that other)</i>
та улица	= <i>that street yonder, that other street</i>
то мѣсто	= <i>that place yonder</i>
э́тотъ грóдъ	= <i>this town</i>
э́та квáртира	= <i>this flat</i>
э́то мѣсто	= <i>this place</i>
э́ти домá	= <i>these houses</i>

тѣ домá	= <i>those houses yonder</i>
эти дерéвни	= <i>these hamlets</i>
тѣ дерéвни	= <i>those other hamlets</i>
эти мѣстá	= <i>these places</i>
тѣ мѣстá	= <i>those other places</i>
весь этотъ домъ нашъ	= <i>all this house is ours</i>
всѣ эти дѣти мой	= <i>all these children are mine</i>
вся наша квартира	= <i>the whole of our flat</i>
они всѣ здорбовы	= <i>they are all well</i>
всё это мѣсто	= <i>the whole of this place</i>
всѣ эти люди больны	= <i>all these people are ill</i>
эта квартира мой	= <i>this flat is mine</i>
это мой квартира	= <i>this is my flat</i>
эти мѣстá наши	= <i>these places are ours</i>
это наши мѣстá	= <i>these are our places</i>
вотъ ваша комната	= <i>this is your room</i>
это мой комната	= <i>this is my room</i>
чей этотъ домъ ?	} = <i>whose house is this ?</i>
or это чей домъ ?	
это мой домъ	= <i>this is my house</i>
этотъ домъ мой	= <i>this house is mine</i>
чья эта квартира ?	} = <i>whose flat is this ?</i>
or это чья квартира ?	
чьё это мѣсто ?	} = <i>whose place is this ?</i>
or это чьё мѣсто ?	

Obs. мѣсто never means *property*, but always a *locality* or a *seat* in the theatre, train, &c., also a *piece* of luggage.

## 68 PRONOUNS WITH SUBSTANTIVES

чъи ёти дёньги ?	}	= <i>whose money is this ?</i>
or ёто чъи дёньги ?		= <i>that is my money</i>
ёто мой дёньги		= <i>that money is mine</i>
ёти дёньги мой		= <i>all our money</i>
всъ нáши дёньги		
ёти дёньги нáши, а	}	= <i>this money is ours, and</i>
тъ вáши		= <i>that over there is yours</i>
всъ ёти дёньги вáши		= <i>all this money is yours</i>
гдъ дёньги ?		= <i>where is the money ?</i>
вотъ дёньги		= <i>here is the money</i>

Obs. Дёньги is a feminine nominative plural ; the singular дёньга is the name of a coin now obsolete.

я самъ	= <i>I myself</i> (masc.)	
я самá	= <i>I myself</i> (fem.)	
ты самъ	= <i>thou thyself</i> (masc.)	
ты самá	= <i>thou thyself</i> (fem.)	
онъ самъ	= <i>he himself</i>	
она самá	= <i>she herself</i>	
мѣсто само		
or само мѣсто	}	= <i>the place itself</i> (neut.)
мы сáми		= <i>we ourselves</i> (masc. and fem.)
вы сáми		= <i>you yourselves</i> (masc. and fem.)
они сáми		= <i>they themselves</i> (masc. and neut.)
онѣ сáми		= <i>they themselves</i> (fem.)
я оди́нъ	= <i>I am alone</i> (masc.)	
я одна	= <i>I am alone</i> (fem.)	
ты оди́нъ ?	= <i>art thou alone ?</i> (masc.)	
ты одна ?	= <i>art thou alone ?</i> (fem.)	
онъ оди́нъ	= <i>he is alone</i>	

она́ однá	= <i>she is alone</i>
мы однý	= <i>we are alone</i> (masc. or masc. and fem.)
вы однý ?	= <i>are you alone ?</i>
онý однý	= <i>they are alone</i>
вы однý ?	= <i>are you alone ?</i> (fem.)
онý однý	= <i>they are alone</i> (fem.)

Obs. In all these cases оди́нъ, &c., can also mean *only*:

я оди́нъ  
or оди́нъ я } = *I alone, only I*

однý мáльчики	= <i>only boys, some boys</i>
однý дéвочки	= <i>only girls, some girls</i>
мáльчики однý	= <i>the boys are alone</i>
дéвочки однý	= <i>the little girls are alone</i>
оди́нъ человéкъ	= (1) <i>one man</i> (2) <i>a certain man</i>
одна́ жéнщина	= (1) <i>one woman</i> (2) <i>a certain woman</i>
однó мéсто	= (1) <i>one place</i> (2) <i>a certain place</i>
однý люди	= <i>some people</i>
однý мéста	= <i>some places</i>
оди́нъ чемодáнъ	= <i>one trunk</i>
оди́нъ день	= <i>one day</i>
оди́нъ рубль	= <i>one rouble</i>
одна́ лóшадь	= <i>one horse</i>
одна́ копéйка	= <i>one kopek</i>
одна́ кóмната	= <i>one room</i>

одна кровáть	= <i>one bed</i>
одно яблóко	= <i>one apple</i>
одно слóво	= <i>one word</i>
одно окнó	= <i>one window</i>

## CHAPTER 17

## THE NOMINATIVE

## Adjectives

Examples of all the essential forms of adjectives are given in the following list in the nominative singular and plural :

		Hard		
		<i>beautiful</i>		
Masc.	красíвый	krasívy	красíвые	krasívy-ye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	красíвое <sup>1</sup>	krasívoye	красíвыя	krasívy-ya <sup>2</sup>
Fem.	красíвая	krasívaya		

## Soft

*dark blue*

Masc.	сíнй	sínyi	сíніе	sínyiye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	сíнее	sínyeye	сíнія	sínyiya <sup>2</sup>
Fem.	сíняя	sínyaya		

## Hard accent on termination

*young*

Masc.	молодóй	maladói	молодые	maladý-ye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	молодóе	maladóye	молодыя	maladý-ya <sup>2</sup>
Fem.	молодáя	maladáya		

<sup>1</sup> This -oe sounds in rapid speech like -ой or -ы.

<sup>2</sup> In rapid speech the -ye and -ya of the plural terminations are indistinguishable.

**Stem in к г х***Singular**Plural**high, tall*

Masc.	высокий	vysóki	высокие	vysókiye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	высокое <sup>1</sup>	vysókoye		
Fem.	высокая	vysókaya	высокия	vysókiya <sup>2</sup>

*Same, with accent on termination**dear*

Masc.	дорогой	daragói	дорогие	daragíye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	дорогое	daragóye		
Fem.	дорогая	daragáya	дорогия	daragíya <sup>2</sup>

**Stem in ж ч ш щ***good, nice*

Masc.	хорошій	(k)haróshy	хорошие	(k)haróshy-ye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	хорошее <sup>3</sup>	(k)harósheye		
Fem.	хорошая	(k)haróshaya	хорошія	(k)haróshy-ya <sup>2</sup>

*Same, with accent on termination**big*

Masc.	большой	bal'shói	большие	bal'shý-ye <sup>2</sup>
Neut.	большое	bal'shóye		
Fem.	большая	bal'sháya	большія	bal'shý-ya <sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This -oe sounds in rapid speech like -ої or -ы.<sup>2</sup> In rapid speech the -ye and -ya of the plural terminations are indistinguishable.<sup>3</sup> This -ee sounds in rapid speech like -е.

## CHAPTER 18

EXAMPLES OF ADJECTIVES USED IN AGREEMENT  
WITH NOUNS

красівый домъ	<i>a</i> (or <i>the</i> ) <i>beautiful house</i>
красівое мѣсто	<i>a beautiful place</i>
красівая квартира	<i>a beautiful flat</i>
красівые дома	( <i>the</i> ) <i>beautiful houses</i>
красівя мѣста	<i>beautiful places</i>
красівя картины	<i>beautiful pictures</i>
синій костюмъ	<i>a dark blue suit</i>
сінєе платье	<i>a dark blue dress</i>
сіняя книга	<i>a blue book</i>
молодой человѣкъ	<i>a young man</i>
молодое дерево	<i>a young tree</i>
молодая девушка	<i>a young girl</i>
молодые люди	<i>young people</i>
молодыя дерёвья	<i>young trees</i>
молодыя девушки	<i>young girls</i>
высокий домъ	<i>a tall house</i>
высокое дерево	<i>a tall tree</i>
высокая гора	<i>a high hill (or mountain)</i>
высокіе дома	<i>tall houses</i>
высокія дерёвья	<i>tall trees</i>
высокія цѣны	<i>high prices</i>
дорогой магазинъ	<i>an expensive shop</i>
дорогое изданіе	<i>an expensive edition</i>
дорогая книга	<i>an expensive book</i>

дорогéе билéты	<i>expensive tickets</i>
дорогíя мѣстá	<i>expensive places</i>
дорогíя вéщи	<i>expensive things</i>
хорóшíй магазíнь	<i>a good shop</i>
хорóшíй ресторáнь	<i>a good restaurant</i>
хорóшíй день	<i>a nice day</i>
хорóшее ма́сло	<i>good butter</i>
хорóшее пíво	<i>good beer</i>
хорóшее винó	<i>good wine</i>
хорóшая кварти́ра	<i>a nice flat</i>
хорóшая кóмната	<i>a nice room</i>
хорóшая погóда	<i>nice weather</i>
большóй гóродъ	<i>a large town</i>
большóе селó	<i>a large village</i>
большáя дерéвня	<i>a large hamlet</i>
большíе городá	<i>large towns</i>
большíя сёла	<i>large villages</i>
большíя кóмнаты	<i>large rooms</i>

## CHAPTER 19

### VOCABULARY

#### Adjectives denoting size, shape, position

большóй	bal'shói	<i>big, large</i>
большíй	bó'il'shy	<i>bigger, larger</i>
великíй	velyíki	<i>great</i>
огрóмный	agrómny	<i>huge</i>
громáдный	gramádny	<i>enormous</i>
небольшóй	nyebal'shói	<i>small</i>

## 74 ADJECTIVES OF SIZE AND SHAPE

мáленький <sup>1</sup>	mályenki	<i>little</i>
мéньший	m(y)éinshy	<i>smaller</i>
круглый	krúgly	<i>round</i>
квадратный	kvadrátny	<i>square</i>
длíнныи	dlyínny	<i>long (of objects)</i>
долгíй	dólgí	<i>long (of time)</i>
короткíй	karótki	<i>short (of both)</i>
широкíй	shyróki	<i>broad</i>
узкíй	úski	<i>narrow</i>
глубокíй	glubóki	<i>deep</i>
мелкíй <sup>2</sup>	myéalki	<i>shallow</i>
толстый	tólsty	<i>thick (only of solids)</i>
тонкíй	tónki	<i>thin (only of solids)</i>
полнýй	pólny	<i>full, fat (of people)</i>
худой	(k)hudói	<i>thin (of people)</i>
пусто́й	puštói	<i>empty</i>
густо́й	gustói	<i>thick (of liquids, hair, &amp;c.)</i>
рѣдкíй	ryéatki	<i>sparse, rare</i>
жидкíй	zhýtki	<i>thin (of liquids)</i>
высокíй	vysóki	<i>tall, high</i>
ни́зкий	nyíski	<i>low</i>
вéрхний	v(y)éirkhnyi	<i>upper</i>
срéдний	sr(y)éidnyi	<i>middle</i>
нижнíй	nyízhnyi	<i>lower</i>
ровный	róvny	<i>even</i>
лѣвый	lyéavy	<i>left</i>
правый	právy	<i>right</i>
заднíй	zádnyi	<i>back</i>
переднíй	per(y)éidnyi	<i>front</i>
слѣдующíй	slyéaduyushchi	<i>next, the following</i>
послѣднíй	paslyéidnyi	<i>last</i>
тамошнíй	támoshnyi	<i>belonging there</i>
здѣшнíй	zdyéishnyi	<i>belonging here</i>
местнýй	myéastny	<i>local</i>

<sup>1</sup> мáлый = *small* is seldom used.

<sup>2</sup> Also = *fine (of print), petty, small (e.g. money).*

## CHAPTER 20

## VOCABULARY

## Adjectives denoting appearance, quality

хоро́шій	(k)haróshy	<i>nice, good</i>
хоро́шенькій	(k)haróshenki	<i>pretty</i>
краси́вый	krasívy	<i>beautiful</i>
прекра́сный	prekrásny	<i>fine, very beautiful</i>
прелéстный	prelyé <sup>a</sup> stny	<i>charming, exquisite</i>
чуди́нний	chúdny	<i>marvellous</i>
отли́чный	atlyíchny	<i>excellent</i>
превосхóдный	prevaskhódný	
великолéпний	velyikalyé <sup>a</sup> pny	<i>magnificent</i>
удиви́тельный	udyivítelny	<i>astonishing</i>
пріятній	priyátny	<i>pleasant</i>
любéзный	lyubyé <sup>a</sup> zny	<i>amiable</i>
дóбрый	dóbry	<i>kind</i>
мíлый	míly	<i>nice, dear</i>
симпати́чный	simpatyíchny	<i>sympathetic</i>
весё́лый	vesyóly	<i>merry</i>
забáвный	zabávny	<i>amusing</i>
интересéный	intyer(y)é <sup>a</sup> sny	<i>interesting</i>
занятній	zanyátny	
привлекáтельный	privlyekátyelny	<i>attractive</i>
вку́сный	fkúsny	<i>nice (to taste)</i>
нехоро́шій	nyekharóshy	<i>not nice</i>
некраси́вый	nyekrasívy	<i>ugly</i>
плохо́й	plakhói	<i>poor, bad, miserable</i>
сквéрный	skvyé <sup>a</sup> rny	<i>horrid, nasty</i>
парши́вый	parshývy	<i>rotten</i>
дряни́й	dryannói	<i>worthless</i>
непріятній	nyepriyátny	<i>unpleasant</i>
дурно́й	durnói	<i>bad, wicked</i>
зло́й	zlói	<i>malicious</i>

## 76 ADJECTIVES OF APPEARANCE AND QUALITY

гру́стный	grústny	<i>sad</i>
ску́чный	skúchny	<i>tedious, boring</i>
неинте́ресный	nyeintyer(y)é <sup>a</sup> sny	<i>uninteresting</i>
опа́сный	apásny	<i>dangerous</i>
стра́шный	stráshny	<i>terrible</i>
ужа́сный	uzhásny	<i>awful</i>
проти́вный	pratyívny	<i>disgusting</i>
необходи́мый	nyeapkhadýímy	<i>essential</i>
ли́шний	lyíshnyi	<i>extra, superfluous</i>
обыкнове́нный	abyknavyénnny	<i>usual</i>
необыкнове́нный	nyeabyknavyénnny	<i>unusual</i>
осо́бенный	asób(y)enny	<i>especial</i>
общий	ópschhi	<i>general</i>
гото́вый	gatóvy	<i>ready</i>
тру́дный	trúdnny	<i>difficult</i>
тяжёлый	tyazhóly	<i>heavy</i>
лёткій	lyókhki	<i>light, easy</i>
просто́й	prastói	<i>simple</i>
сложный	slózhny	<i>complex</i>
прямо́й	pryamói	<i>direct, straight</i>
дорого́й	daragói	<i>dear, expensive</i>
дешёвый	dyeshóvy	<i>cheap</i>
чи́стый	chísty	<i>clean</i>
гря́зный	gryázny	<i>dirty</i>
бога́тый	bagáty	<i>rich</i>
бре́дный	byédnny	<i>poor</i>
счастли́вый	schastlyívny	<i>happy</i>
несча́стный	nyeschástny	<i>unhappy</i>
удо́бный	udóbny	<i>convenient, comfortable</i>
неудо́бный	nyeudóbny	<i>inconvenient, uncomfortable</i>
здоро́вый	zdaróvy	<i>healthy</i>
больнóй	bal'nói	<i>sick</i>
свобо́дный	svabódny	<i>free</i>
сле́пой	slyepói	<i>blind</i>
глухо́й	glukhói	<i>deaf</i>
нѣ́мой	nyemói	<i>dumb</i>

## ADJECTIVES OF APPEARANCE AND QUALITY 77

сильный	síl'ny	<i>strong</i> (physically and figuratively)
крепкий	kryéapki	<i>strong</i> (of drinks, health), <i>firm</i>
твёрдый	tvyórdy	<i>hard, firm</i>
слабый	sláby	<i>weak</i>
мягкий	myákhki	<i>soft</i>
гладкий	glátki	<i>smooth</i>
грубый	grúby	<i>rough, coarse, rude</i>
сладкий	slátki	<i>sweet</i>
кислый	kíslý	<i>sour</i>
горький	góir'ki	<i>bitter</i>
свежий	svyéazhy	<i>fresh</i>
спелый	spyéaly	<i>ripe</i>
горячий	garyáchi	<i>hot</i> (of objects)
жаркий	zhárki	<i>hot</i> (of temperature)
тёплый	tyóply	<i>warm</i>
прохладный	prakhládny	<i>cool</i>
холодный	(k)halódny	<i>cold</i>
скорый	skóry	<i>rapid</i>
шибкий	shýpki	<i>quick</i>
быстрый	býstry	<i>swift</i>
тихий	tyíkhi	<i>quiet, slow</i>
медленный	myéidlyenny	<i>slow</i>
мокрый	mókry	<i>wet</i>
сырой	syrói	<i>damp, raw</i>
сухой	sukhói	<i>dry</i>

## CHAPTER 21

### VOCABULARY

#### Adjectives denoting colour and age

светлый	svyéatly	<i>light</i>
тёмный	tyómny	<i>dark</i>
чёрный	chórny	<i>black</i>
коричневый	karíchnyevy	<i>brown</i>

## 78 ADJECTIVES OF COLOUR AND AGE

сърый	syé <sup>a</sup> ry	grey
бѣлый	byéaly	white
красный	krásny	red
зелёный	zelyóny	green
жёлтый	zhólty	yellow
синий	sínyi	dark blue
голубой	galúboi	light blue
лиловый	lyilóvy	lilac, mauve
блѣдный	blyé <sup>a</sup> dny	pale
смѣглый	smúgly	dark (of complexion)
рыжий	rýzhy	red-haired
русый	rúsy	flaxen-haired
бѣлокурый	byelakúry	fair-haired
сѣдой	syedói	gray-haired
ясный	yásny	clear, plain
яркий	yárki	bright
новый	nóvy	new
молодой	maladói	young
старый	stáry	old
старинный	starínny	old-fashioned
древній	dr(y)é <sup>i</sup> vnyi	ancient
старшій	stárshy	elder
младшій	mládshy	younger
пожилой	pazhylói	elderly
прежній	pr(y)é <sup>i</sup> zhnyi	former
прошлый	próshly	last, the previous
будущій	búdushchy	the coming, next
ранній	rányi	early
поздній	pózdnyi	late
весенній	v(y)esye <sup>i</sup> nnyi	spring
лѣтній	lyé <sup>i</sup> tnyi	summer
осенний	asyé <sup>i</sup> nnyi	autumn
зимній	zímnyi	winter
утренній	útrennyi	morning
вечерній	v(y)eche <sup>i</sup> rnyi	evening
теперешній	tyep(y)é <sup>i</sup> reshnyi	of nowadays
тогдашній	taghdáshnyi	of those days

## CHAPTER 22

## VOCABULARY

## Adjectives denoting Nationality

австрійський	afstríiski	Austrian
американський	amerikánski	American
англійський	ánglyiski	English
бельгійський	belgíiski	Belgian
болгарський	balgárski	Bulgarian
венгерський	veng(y)é <sup>a</sup> rski	Hungarian
голландський	galántski	Dutch
грецький	gr(y)é <sup>i</sup> cheski	Greek
датський	dátski	Danish
испанський	ispánksi	Spanish
итальянський	italyánski	Italian
китайський	kitáiski	Chinese
норвежський	narv(y)é <sup>a</sup> zhski	Norwegian
німецький	nyemyé <sup>a</sup> tski	German
польський	póil'ski	Polish
румунський	rumýnski	Roumanian
руський	rúski	Russian, a Russian
сербський	s(y)é <sup>a</sup> rpksi	Serbian
турецький	tur(y)é <sup>a</sup> tski	Turkish
фінляндський	finlyántski	Finnish
французький	frantsúski	French
черногорський	chernagórski	Montenegrin
чеський	ché <sup>a</sup> shski	Chekh, Bohemian
шведський	shv(y)é <sup>a</sup> tski	Swedish
швейцарський	shveitsárski	Swiss
японський	yapónski	Japanese

N.B. the common adverbial expressions formed from these words, e.g.:

по-русски = *in Russian*  
&c.

какъ это по-русски ? = *what is that in Russian ?*  
по-англійски это . . . = *in English that is . . .*

**Surnames**

such as

(графъ) Толстóй	talstói	(Count) <i>Tolstói</i>
(графыня) Толстáя	talstáya	(Countess) <i>Tolstói</i>
Достоéвский	dastayéfski	<i>Dostoyévski</i>
Чайкóвский	chaykófski	<i>Chaikóvski</i>
(княгýня) Барýтинская	baryátyinskaya	(Princess) <i>Baryátinski</i>

Many adjectives are used as nouns, e.g. :

гóрничая	=house-maid	мяснóе <sup>2</sup>	=meat-course
городово́й	=policeman	на́бережная	=quay
гостíная <sup>1</sup>	=drawing-room	насéкóмое	=insect
дéтская <sup>1</sup>	=nursery	пóдданный	=subject
жаркóе <sup>2</sup>	=roast meat (course)	рыбное <sup>2</sup>	=fish-course
живóтное	=animal	слáдкое <sup>2</sup>	=sweet-course
знакомый, -ая	=acquaintance	столóвая <sup>1</sup>	=dining-room
золотóй	=10-rouble gold coin	холостóй	=bachelor
кладовáя <sup>1</sup>	=store-room	цéлкóвый	=a rouble
мороженное	=ice (to eat)	часовóй	=sentry

**CHAPTER 23****THE TWO FORMS OF THE ADJECTIVE**

The adjective in Russian has two forms :

- (1) the short, or predicative ;
- (2) the long, or attributive.

The former is exactly like a noun, and, except in poetry, is only used as the predicate and in the nominative, e.g. :

я здорóвъ	= <i>I am well</i>
ты довблéнъ	= <i>thou art pleased</i>
онъ готóвъ	= <i>he is ready</i>
она́ красíва	= <i>she is beautiful</i>

<sup>1</sup> Sc. кóмната = *room*.<sup>2</sup> Sc. блóдо = *dish*.

The latter is used as an attribute and must agree with the noun it qualifies. Examples of both forms of the adjective have already been given, but it is necessary to add the following observations on their use.

1. In theory the short or predicative form of the adjective is always used when the adjective forms the predicate ; in practice, however, it will be found that the long or attributive form, more often than not, takes its place, all the more as the adjective, when it forms the attribute, in Russian is frequently placed after the noun which it qualifies. Examples :

онъ бчень мйлый = *he is (a) very nice (fellow)*

она краси́вая = *she is (a) beautiful (woman)*

2. Adjectives containing two consonants before the termination sometimes have an e or o inserted between the two consonants in the short form in the masc. nom. sing. :

больной	блонъ
несчáстный	несчáстенъ
полный	полонъ
лёгкий	лёгокъ

3. Большой, небольшой and маленький have no short forms ; the following adjectives are used instead if predicative forms are required :

гróдъ вели́къ	<i>the town is big</i>
кóмната велика	<i>the room is big</i>
móре велико	<i>the sea is big</i>
дома велики	<i>the houses are big</i>
квартíры велики	<i>the rooms are big</i>
поля велики	<i>the fields are big</i>
невеликъ, &c.	<i>small</i>
малъ, малá, малó, малы	<i>little</i>

## 82 THE TWO FORMS OF THE ADJECTIVE

(Велíкъ and малъ are often used in the sense of *too big* and *too small*.) Мáленькíй is much more often used than малъ. Such predicative forms of the adjective as have been given in the preceding pages, e.g.: я здорóвъ = *I am well*, я бóленъ = *I am ill*, are all very commonly used; the word больнóй, больнáя (i.e. the attributive form of this adjective) as a rule means *the patient, the invalid*. The word радъ is only used in the short form.

4. Adjectives denoting colour and those ending in -скíй are only used in the long form, e.g. :

онъ рýсскíй	<i>he is a Russian</i>
éта дáма—рýсская	<i>this lady is a Russian</i>
мо́й собáка—чёрная	<i>my dog is black</i>

OBS. The dash is often used to take the place of *is, are*.

## CHAPTER 24

### PRONOUNS LIKE ADJECTIVES, AND THE SUPERLATIVE

пéрвый	pyé <sup>a</sup> rvy	<i>first</i>
вторóй	ftarói	<i>second</i>
трéтíй	tr(y)é <sup>i</sup> tyi	<i>third</i>
другóй	drugói	<i>other</i>
кáждýй	kázhdy	<i>every, each</i>
всýкíй	fsyáki	<i>of every kind</i>
котóрый	katóry	<i>which</i>
нéкоторый	nyé <sup>a</sup> katory	<i>a certain, some</i>
какóй	kakói	<i>of what sort</i>
какóвъ	kakóf	<i>what like</i>

никако́й	nyikakói	<i>of no sort</i>
како́й-то	kakóita	<i>of some sort</i>
како́й-нибудь	kakóinyibut'	<i>{ of any sort of some sort or other }</i>
тако́й	takói	<i>of such a sort</i>
тако́й-то	takóita	<i>such and such</i>
сáмый	sámy	<i>the very</i>
любо́й	lyubói	<i>any you like</i>
ино́й	inói	<i>some</i>
мнóгие	mnógiye	<i>many (people), several</i>
немнóгие	nyemnógiye	<i>not many, few</i>
нéсколькíе	nyé <sup>a</sup> skalkiye	<i>a few</i>

and the adjective used as a noun

мнóгое mnógoye (cf. p. 71) *much*

оди́нъ разъ } =once  
*or* разъ }

пéрвый разъ = *the first time*

пéрвый день = *the first day*

пéрвый классъ = *first class*

пéрвое дéло = *the first thing (matter, business)*

пéрвая улица = *the first street*

пéрвое мéсто = *the first place*

второ́й разъ = *the second time*

второ́й день = *the second day*

второ́й классъ = *second class*

второ́е дéло = *the second thing*

вторáя ночь = *the second night*

трéтий разъ = *the third time*

трéтий день = *the third day*

трéтий классъ = *third class*

трéтье дѣло = *the third thing*

трéтье мѣсто = *the third place*

трéтья юлица = *the third street*

трéтья ночь = *the third night*

трéтья дочь = *the third daughter*

каждый поѣздъ = *every train*

каждое слѣво = *every word*

каждая станиця = *every station*

другої разъ = *another time*

другої день = *another day*

другобѣ мѣсто = *another place*

другобѣ полотѣнце = *another towel*

другая комната = *another (or different) room*

другая юлица = *another street*

который нбмеръ ? = *which number ?* (cf. p. 45)

который подъѣздъ ? = *which front door ?*

которая комната ? = *which room ?*

которая лѣстница ? = *which staircase ?*

какої супъ ? = *what kind of soup ?*

какое мясо ? = *what kind of meat ?*

какая юлица ? = *what street ?*

это какої гродъ ? = *what town is that ?*

это какої домъ ? = *what house is that ?*

который вашъ домъ ? = *which is your house ?*

который сегодня день ? } = *what day is it to-day ?*  
or какої сегодня день ? }

сегодня Воскресеніе = *to-day is Sunday (Resurrection)*

завтра понедѣльникъ = *to-morrow is Monday*

сегодня втѣрникъ = *to-day is Tuesday*

зáвтра средá = *to-morrow is Wednesday*

вчérá быль четвéргъ = *yesterday was Thursday*

зáвтра пátница = *to-morrow is Friday*

вчérá быlá суббóта = *yesterday was Saturday*

это какáя ýлица ? = *what street is this ?*

это Нéвский Проспéктъ = *that is the Nevski Prospect*

это какáя рéкá ? = *what river is this ?*

это Невá = *that is the Neva*

котóрая вáша квартíра ? = *which is your flat ?*

котóрая вáша кóмната ? = *which is your room ?*

воть нáща квартíра = *that is our flat*

это мой кóмната = *this is my room*

котóрое вáше мéсто ? = *which is your place ?*

воть это моё мéсто = *this is my place here*

это какóе мéсто ? = *what place is this ?*

это большóе селó = *it is a large village*

это Цáрское Селó = *it is Tsarskoye Selo*

(lit. *the Tsar's Village*)

котóрые нáши билéты ? = *which tickets are ours ?*

это какíе люди ? = *what people are these ?*

котóрыя вáши вéщи ? = *which are your things ?*

воть это мой вéщи = *these are my things here*

~~всé~~ эти вéщи вáши ? = *are all these things yours ?*

да, онé всé мой = *yes, they are all mine*

это какíя дéньги ? = *what money is this ?*

это рýсскíя дéньги = *it is Russian money*

нéть, это не рýсскíя дéньги = *no, it is not Russian money*

тé дéньги вáши, а эти мой = *that money is yours, but this is mine*

это какíя мéстá ? = *what places are these ?*

это бчень хорóшíя, но бчень } = { *those are very good but*  
дорогíя мéстá } = { *very expensive places*

котóрыя вáши полá ? = *which are your fields ?*

всé ёти полá моí = *all these fields are mine*

котóрыя вáши дёти ? = *which are your children ?*

вотъ ёто мой дёти = *these are my children here*

какíя красíвыя и хорóшíя } = { *what beautiful and nice  
дёти !* } = { *children !*

какóй красíвый домъ = *what a beautiful house*

какáя плохáя погóда = *what bad weather*

какóе хорóшее мéсто = *what a nice place*

какíе большíе магазíны = *what large shops*

какíя дешёвыя кни́ги = *what cheap books*

какíя стáрыя дерéвья = *what old trees*

такóй хорóшíй день = *such a nice day*

такáя красíвая у́лица = *such a beautiful street*

такóе большóе селó = *such a large village*

такíе хорóшíе лю́ди = *such nice people*

такíя красíвыя дёвшушки = *such pretty girls*

такíя большíя дерéвья = *such large trees*

Obs. A more emphatic form of this word, but little used by educated people, is ётакóй, ётакáя, ётакóе, &c.

кто ёто такóй ? } = *who is that ?*  
or кто ёто такóй ? }

кто онъ такóй ? = *who is he ?*

кто онá такáя ? = *who is she ?*

кто они́ такíе ? = *who are they ?*

что ёто такóе ? } = *what is that ?*  
or что ёто такóе ? }

ктó-то тамъ = *there is some one there*

чтó-то тамъ = *there is something there*

тамъ ли ктó-нибудь ? = *is any one there ?*

тамъ ли чтó-нибудь ? = *is anything there ?*

како́й-то человéкъ = *some man, a certain man*  
 кака́я-то у́лица = *some street, a certain street*  
 како́е-то селó = *some village, a certain village*  
 каки́е-то лю́ди = *some people or other*  
 каки́я-то жéнщины = *some women or other*  
 каки́я-то дѣлá = *some sort of affairs*  
 како́й-нибуль магазíнъ = *any (sort of) shop*  
 кака́я-нибуль ве́щь = *any (sort of) thing*  
 како́е-нибуль мѣсто = *any (sort of) place*  
 каки́е-нибуль горо́дá = *any towns*  
 каки́я-нибуль вéщи = *any things*  
 каки́я-нибуль мѣстá = *any places*

нѣкоторые лю́ди = *certain people*  
 нѣкоторыя вéщи = *certain things*  
 нѣкоторыя мѣстá = *certain places*

како́й супъ ? = *what kind of soup ?*  
 како́въ супъ ? = *what is the soup like ?*  
 како́е винó ? = *what kind of wine ?*  
 како́вое винó ? = *what is the wine like ?*  
 кака́я ры́ба ? = *what kind of fish ?*  
 како́вá ры́ба ? = *what is the fish like ?*

сáмый краси́вый домъ = *the most beautiful house*  
 сáмый большо́й гóродъ = *the biggest town*  
 сáмая краси́вая у́лица = *the most beautiful street*  
 сáмая но́вая ве́щь = *the newest thing*  
 сáмое краси́вое мѣсто = *the most beautiful place*  
 сáмое стáрое дéрево = *the oldest tree*  
 сáмые ма́ленькие домá = *the smallest houses*  
 сáмые дорого́я кни́ги = *the dearest books*  
 сáмые дешёвыя мѣстá = *the cheapest places*

N.B.	сáмый лúчšíй	= <i>best</i>
	сáмый плохóй	
	сáмый сквéрный	} = <i>worst</i>

OBS. Adjectives in the superlative degree have only the longer or attributive form :

этотъ магазíнь сáмый лúчšíй  
*this shop is the best*

эта кóмната сáмая маленькая  
*this room is the smallest*

это издáніе сáмое дешёвое  
*this edition is the cheapest*

N.B.	млáдшíй	= <i>younger</i>
	стáршíй	= <i>elder</i>
	сáмый млáдшíй	= <i>youngest</i>
	сáмый стáршíй	= <i>eldest</i>

онъ мой сáмый млáдшíй братъ = *he is my youngest brother*  
твой стáршая сестrá = *thy elder sister*  
онъ сáмый стáршíй = *he is the eldest*  
это мой млáдшая сестrá = *that is my younger sister.*

тотъ сáмый гóродъ = *the same town*  
та сáмая улица = *the same street*  
то сáмое мѣсто = *the same place*  
тѣ сáмые магазíны = *the same shops*  
тѣ сáмые вéщи = *the same things*  
тѣ сáмые дѣлá = *the same affairs*

## CHAPTER 25

### THE GENITIVE

#### **Substantives**

The genitive singular endings are :

HARD	Masculine	-а
	Neuter	
	Feminine	

and

SOFT	Masculine	-я
	Neuter	
	Feminine	

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masculine	магазíна	magazína
		билéта	bilyéta
		столá	stalá
	Neuter	мъста	myésta
		селá	s(y)elá
		общества	ópshestva
	Feminine	бáбы	báby
		кóмнаты	kómnaty
		избý	izbý

SOFT NOUNS	Masculine	автомобíля слúчая соловьá Васíлія	aftamabílya slúchaya salavyá vasíliya
	Neuter	пóля ружьá имéнія	pólya ruzhyá imyéniya
	Feminine	недéли статьí áрміи Россíи	nyedyélyi statyí ármiyi rassíyi

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension :

	NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
HARD	конéцъ kanyéats	концá kantsá
	посóль pasól	послá paslá
	ребёнокъ rebyónak	ребёнка rebyónka
SOFT	день dyeín'	дня dnya
	огóнь agóin'	огнá agnyá

Some masculine nouns have an alternative genitive singular in -y (hard), -ю (soft), called partitive, which is used after words denoting substances of which a definite or indefinite quantity is indicated :

	NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
HARD	cáxаръ sákhar sugar	cáxary
	табáкъ tabák tobacco	табакý
SOFT	чай chái tea	чáю

But the use of this genitive has been considerably extended and is common where there is no idea of partition ; cf. *нѣту*, an alternative and colloquial form of *нѣть* = *there is not*.

All feminine nouns which have nominative singular in -ка, -га, -ха, -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща

have genitive singular

-ки, -ги, -хи, -жи, -чи, -ши, -щи,

because ы cannot stand after these consonants ; but nevertheless -жи and -ши are pronounced -жы and -шы.

Examples (with pronunciation) :

NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
дѣвочка dyévachka	дѣвочки dyévachki
свѣчѣ sv(y)echá	свѣчѣ sv(y)echí
калѡша kalósha	калѡши kalóshy

Feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина, have genitive singular in -ой : Павловой, Арсеньевой, Карсавиной.

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ъ have genitive singular in -и, e.g. :

NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
лѡшадь horse	лѡшади
вещь thing	вѣщи
церковь church	церкви
мать mother	м�тери
дочь daughter	д�чери

Neuter nouns in -я have genitive singular in -ени, e.g. :

NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
вр�емя time	вр�емени

The genitive plural endings are :

<b>HARD</b>	Masculine	-овъ
	Neuter	{ -ъ
	Feminine	

and

<b>SOFT</b>	Masculine	-ей, -евъ
	Neuter	-ей, -ий
	Feminine	-ъ, -ей, -ий

Examples :

<b>HARD NOUNS</b>	Masculine	магази́новъ	magazínaf
		билéтовъ	bilyétaf
		столóвъ	stalóf
	Neuter	мѣстъ	myé*st
		сёль	syol
		обществъ	ópschchestf
	Feminine	бабъ	bap
		кóмнатъ	kómnat
		избъ	izb
<b>SOFT NOUNS</b>	Masculine	автомобíлей	aftamabíleyi
		слúчаевъ	slúchayef
		соловьёвъ	salavyóf
	Neuter	полéй	palyéi
		ружéй	ruzhéi
		имъній	imyé*nyi
	Feminine	недѣль	nyedyéil'
		статéй	statyéi
		áрмій	ármí

Several masculine nouns have genitive plural in -ъ, e.g. :

## NOM. SING.

солдáть	<i>soldier</i>
разъ	<i>time (a)</i>
глазъ	<i>eye</i>
арши́нъ	<i>yard</i>

## GEN. PLUR.

солдáть	<i>saldát</i>
разъ	<i>ras</i>
глазъ	<i>glas</i>
арши́нъ	<i>arshýn</i>

## NOM. PLUR.

волосы	<i>hair (collective)</i>
конфéты	<i>sweets</i>
фрукты	<i>fruit (collective)</i>

волóсь	<i>valós</i>
конфéть	<i>kanfyé<sup>a</sup>t</i>
фруктъ	<i>frukt</i>

Likewise nouns in -инъ, e.g. :

## NOM. PLUR.

крестьáне	<i>krestyánye</i>
англичáне	<i>anglyichánye</i>

## GEN. PLUR.

крестьáнъ	<i>krestyán</i>
англичáнъ	<i>anglyichán</i>

Likewise the neuters :

## NOM. PLUR.

яблоки	<i>yáblaki</i>	<i>apples</i>
плéчи	<i>plyé<sup>a</sup>chi</i>	<i>shoulders</i>
колéни	<i>kalyé<sup>a</sup>nyi</i>	<i>knees</i>

## GEN. PLUR.

яблокъ	<i>yáblak</i>
плечъ	<i>plyé<sup>a</sup>ch</i>
колéнь	<i>kalyé<sup>a</sup>n</i>

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension :

## NOM. PLUR.

HARD	{	концы	<i>kantsý</i>
		послы	<i>paslý</i>

## GEN. PLUR.

концóвъ	<i>kantsóf</i>
послóвъ	<i>paslóf</i>

SOFT	{	дни	<i>dnyí</i>
		огнí	<i>agnyí</i>

дней	<i>dnyéi</i>
огнéй	<i>agnyéi</i>

OBS. Those in -ецъ which have not the accent on the termination have gen. plur. in -евъ :

## NOM. SING.

мѣсяцъ	myé'syats	month
нѣмецъ	nyé'm(y)ets	German

## NOM. PLUR.

мѣсяцы	myé'syatsy
нѣмцы	nyé^mtsy

## GEN. PLUR.

мѣсяцевъ	myé'syatsef
нѣмцевъ	nyé^mtsef

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in

-жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ

have genitive plural in -ей, e.g. :

## NOM. SING.

ножъ	nozh	knife
ключъ	klyuch	key

## NOM. PLUR.

ножи	nazhý
ключи	klyuchí

## GEN. PLUR.

ножей	nazhéi
ключей	klyuchéi

Feminine and neuter nouns with two consonants before the final -а, -я, -о, -е, which in the genitive plural (without termination) would be difficult to pronounce, insert e or o between them to facilitate pronunciation, e.g. :

## NOM. SING.

дѣвочка	little girl
дѣвшка	girl

## NOM. PLUR.

дѣвочки
дѣвшки

## GEN. PLUR.

дѣвочекъ
дѣвшекъ
дерѣвни
бáрыши

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.	GEN. PLUR.
—	<i>money</i>	дénьги	дénегъ
окнó	<i>window</i>	óкна	óконъ
письмó	<i>letter</i>	пíсьма	пíсемъ

The following must be remembered :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
стúлья <sup>1</sup>	stúlya <sup>1</sup>	стúльевъ	stúlyef
брáтья	brátya	брáтьевъ	brátyef
сыновья	synavyá	сыновéй	synavyéi
друзъя	druzyá	друзéй	druzyéi
сосéди	sasyé <sup>i</sup> dyi	сосéдей	sasyé <sup>i</sup> dyei
цвéтá	tsv(y)etá }	цвéтбвъ	tsv(y)etóf
цвéты	tsv(y)etý }		
дерéвья	dyer(y)é <sup>i</sup> vya	дерéвьевъ	dyer(y)é <sup>i</sup> vyef
судá	sudá	судóвъ	sudóf
облакá <sup>2</sup>	ablaká	облакóвъ	ablakóf
úши	úshy	ушéй	ushéi
óчи	óchi	очéй	achéi
чудесá	chudyesá	чудéсь	chudyé <sup>a</sup> s
небесá	nyeb(y)esá	небéсь	nyebyé <sup>a</sup> s
яйца <sup>3</sup>	yáitsa	яйцъ	yayíts

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь, and nominative plural in -и have genitive plural in -ей, e.g. :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
лошади	lóshadyi	лошадéй	lashadyéi
вéщи	v(y)é <sup>i</sup> shchi	вещéй	v(y)eshchéi

<sup>1</sup> For meanings cf. p. 37.

<sup>2</sup> Nom. sing. óблако = *cloud*.

<sup>3</sup> Nom. sing. яйцó = *egg*.

NOM. PLUR.	GEN. PLUR.
цéркви	ts(y)é <sup>i</sup> rkvi
мáтери	mátyeri
дóчери	dócheri
люди	lyúdyi
дѣти	dyé <sup>i</sup> tyi
церквéй	tserkvyéi
матерéй	matyeryéi
дочерéй	dacheryéi
людéй	lyudyéi
дѣтéй	dyetyéi

Neuter nouns in -я have genitive plural in -ёнъ, e.g. : времена́ vremená , времёнъ vremyón.

CHAPTER 26

## PRONOUNS

NOMINATIVE		GENITIVE	
	я	меня́	m(y)enyá
	ты	тебя́	tyebyá
masc.	онъ }	егó <sup>1</sup>	yevó
neut.	онó }	её <sup>1</sup>	yeyó
fem.	она́		
	мы	насъ	nas
	вы	васъ	vas
masc., neut.	они́ }	ихъ <sup>1</sup>	yikh
fem.	они́ }		
m., n., f.	—	себя́ <sup>2</sup>	s(y)ebyá

<sup>1</sup> When governed by a preposition these words assume an initial  
и, e.g. отъ него, отъ неё, отъ нихъ.

<sup>2</sup> *себя* is the reflexive pronoun, which can be used of any person in either number, but must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence ; it can mean : *myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves or themselves* ; it has no nominative.

	NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.      мой	моегó	mayevó
	neut.      моё		
	fem.      мой	моéй	mayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	мой	мойхъ
			mayíkh
SING.	masc.      твой	твоегó	tvayevó
	neut.      твоё		
	fem.      твой	твоéй	tvayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	твой	твойхъ
			tvayíkh
SING.	masc.      нашъ	нашего	násheva
	neut.      наше		
	fem.      наша	нашей	náshei
PLUR.	m., n., f.	наши	нашихъ
			náshykh
SING.	masc.      вашъ	вáшего	vásheva
	neut.      вáше		
	fem.      вáша	вáшей	váshei
PLUR.	m., n., f.	вáши	вáшихъ
			váshykh
SING.	masc.      свой <sup>1)</sup>	своегó	svayevó
	neut.      своё		
	fem.      свой	своéй	svayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	свой	свойхъ
			svayíkh
masc., fem. neut.	кто	когó	kavó
	что	чегó	chevó

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note on p. 56.

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	чей	чье́го	chyevó
	neut.	чъё		
	fem.	чья		
PLUR.	m., n., f.	чыи	чыхъ	chyíkh
SING.	masc.	оди́нь	одногó	adnavó
	neut.	однó		
	fem.	однá		
PLUR.	masc., neut.	одни́	одни́хъ	adnyíkh
	fem.	однě́	однě́хъ	adnyéakh
SING.	masc.	самъ	самогó	samavó
	neut.	самó		
	fem.	самá		
PLUR.	m., n., f.	сáми	сами́хъ	samíkh
SING.	masc.	э́тотъ	э́того	é*tava
	neut.	э́то		
	fem.	э́та	э́той <sup>1</sup>	é*toi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	э́ти	э́тихъ	é*tyikh
SING.	masc.	тотъ	тогó	tavó
	neut.	то		
	fem.	та	той	toi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	тѣ	тѣхъ	tyéakh
SING.	masc.	весь	всегó	fs(y)evó
	neut.	всё		
	fem.	вся	всей	fsyéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	всѣ	всѣхъ	fsyeakh

<sup>1</sup> This -ои in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

## CHAPTER 27

## ADJECTIVES

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	краси́вый	краси́ваго	krasívava
	neut.	краси́вое	краси́вой <sup>1</sup>	krasívoi
	fem.	краси́вая	краси́вой	krasívoi
PLUR.	m.	краси́вые	краси́выхъ	krasívykh
	n., f.	краси́вья		
SING.	masc.	сíній	сíняго	sínyava
	neut.	сíнее	сíней	sínyei
	fem.	сíняя	сíнихъ	sínyikh
PLUR.	m.	сíніе		
	n., f.	сíнія		
SING.	masc.	молодо́й	молодо́го	maladóva
	neut.	молодо́е	молодо́й	maladói
	fem.	молодо́я		
PLUR.	m.	молодо́е	молодо́хъ	maladýkh
	n., f.	молодо́я		
SING.	masc.	высокíй	высокаго	vysókava
	neut.	высокое	высокой <sup>1</sup>	vysókoi
	fem.	высокая		
PLUR.	m.	высокіе	высокихъ	vysókikh
	n., f.	высокія		

<sup>1</sup> This -ои in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

	NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc. дорогóй	дорогóго	daragóva
	neut. дорогóе	дорогóй	daragói
	fem. дорогáя	дорогíхъ	daragíkh
PLUR.	m. дорожé	дорожáхъ	daragíkh
	n., f. дорожíя		
SING.	masc. хоро́шíй	хоро́шаго	(k)haróshava
	neut. хоро́шее	хоро́шей	(k)haróshei
	fem. хоро́шáя	хоро́шихъ	(k)haróshykh
PLUR.	m. хоро́шíе	хоро́шаго	bal'shóva
	n., f. хоро́шíя	хоро́шой	bal'shói
		большíхъ	bal'shýkh
SING.	masc. большóй	большóго	
	neut. большóе	большóй	
	fem. большáя		
PLUR.	m. большíе	большаго	
	n., f. большíя	большой	
		большихъ	

## CHAPTER 28

## VOCABULARY

## Literature, Music, Theatre, &amp;c.

газéта <i>f.</i>	gazyéata	newspaper
журнál <i>m.</i>	zhurnál	magazine
статья <i>f.</i>	statyá	article
ромáн <i>m.</i>	ramán	novel
разскáз <i>m.</i>	raskás	tale
томъ <i>m.</i>	tom	volume
издáніе <i>n.</i>	izdániye	edition
сочинéніе <i>n.</i>	sachinyéniye	work, composition
собráніе <i>n.</i>	sabrániye	collection

стихоторéние <i>n.</i>	styikhatvar(y)éniye	<i>poem</i>
пьéса <i>f.</i>	pyésa	<i>play</i>
сцéна <i>f.</i>	sts(y)éna	<i>stage</i>
представлéние <i>n.</i>	pretstavlyéniye	<i>performance</i>
дéйствiе <i>n.</i>	dyéistviye	<i>act</i>
слóво <i>n.</i>	slóva	<i>word</i>
словáрь <i>m.</i>	slavář	<i>dictionary</i>
языкъ <i>m.</i>	yazýk	<i>language</i>
картина <i>f.</i>	kartyína	<i>picture</i>
худóжникъ <i>m.</i>	(k)hudózhnyik	<i>artist, painter</i>
писáтель <i>m.</i>	pisátyel'	<i>writer</i>
áвторъ <i>m.</i>	áftor	<i>author</i>
литератúра <i>f.</i>	lyityeratúra	<i>literature</i>
худóжество <i>n.</i>	(k)hudózhestva	<i>painting</i>
урóкъ <i>m.</i>	urók	<i>lesson</i>
музыка <i>f.</i>	múzyka	<i>music</i>
ройль <i>m.</i>	rayáil'	<i>grand piano</i>
пьянино <i>n.</i>	pyanyíno	<i>upright piano</i>
нóты <i>f. pl.</i>	nóty	<i>music (printed)</i>
концéртъ <i>m.</i>	kants(y)éart	<i>concert</i>
пéсня <i>f.</i>	p(y)éisnya	<i>song</i>
ка́рты <i>f. pl.</i>	kárty	<i>cards</i>
игrá <i>f.</i>	igrá	<i>game</i>
шáхматы <i>m. pl.</i>	shákhmaty	<i>chess</i>
разговóръ <i>m.</i>	razgavór	<i>conversation</i>
надéжда <i>f.</i>	nadyéazhda	<i>hope</i>
вéра <i>f.</i>	vyégra	<i>faith</i>
любóвь <i>f.</i>	lyubólf	<i>love</i>
войнá <i>f.</i>	vainá	<i>war</i>
миръ <i>m.</i>	mir	<i>peace</i>
закónъ <i>m.</i>	zakón	<i>law</i>
мнéние <i>m.</i>	mnyéniye	<i>opinion</i>
счáстie <i>n.</i>	schástiye	<i>happiness</i>
несчáстie <i>n.</i>	nyeschástiye	<i>unhappiness</i>
удивлéние <i>n.</i>	udyivlyéniye	<i>surprise</i>
сожалéние <i>n.</i>	sazhalýéniye	<i>regret</i>
удовóльствiе	udavól'stviye	<i>pleasure</i>

## CHAPTER 29

## PHRASES CONTAINING WORDS IN THE GENITIVE

Петрогráдъ и Москвá—столíцы Россíи

*Petrograd and Moscow are the capitals of Russia*

Лóндонъ—столíца Англíи

*London is the capital of England*

мой товáрищъ—сынъ вáшего знакóмаго

*my friend is the son of your acquaintance (masc.)*

вашъ знакóмый—другъ моегó отцá

*your acquaintance is a friend of my father's*

это большóй другъ моегó бráта

*that is a great friend of my brother's*

моá сестrá—прíятельница вáшей дóчери

*my sister is a friend of your daughter*

вашъ сынъ—ученикъ моегó дáди

*your son is a pupil of my uncle*

вáша дóчка—ученица моей знакóмой

*your daughter is a pupil of my acquaintance (fem.)*

вагóнъ пéрваго клáсса

*a railway carriage of the first class*

билéтъ вторóго клáсса

*a ticket of the second class*

зáла трéтьяго клáсса

*a third-class waiting-room*

человéкъ такóго рóда

*a man of such a kind*

такого рода люди

*people of such a kind*

это какого рода театръ ?

*what sort of theatre is that ?*

это какого рода зданіе ?

*what sort of building is that ?*

это домъ моего старшего брата

*this is the house of my elder brother*

это квартира моей младшей сестры

*this is the flat of my younger sister*

это имѣніе моихъ родителей

*this is the property of my parents*

гдѣ портрѣтъ твоего отца ?

*where is thy father's portrait ?*

гдѣ портрѣтъ твоей матери ?

*where is thy mother's portrait ?*

гдѣ имѣніе твоихъ друзей ?

*where is your friends' property ?*

это подъездъ нашего дома

*this is the front door of our house*

вотъ окна нашей квартиры

*these are the windows of our flat*

это комната нашихъ дѣтей

*that is our children's room*

какъ здоровье вашаго супруга ?

*how is your husband's health ?*

какъ здорбвье вѣшай супрѣги ?

*how is your wife's health ?*

какъ здорбвье вѣшихъ родителей ?

*how is your parents' health ?*

пѣлное собрание сочиненій грава Лѣвѣ<sup>1</sup> Николаевича  
Толстого

*a complete collection of the works of Count Leo Nikolayevich  
Tolstoi*

всѣ сочиненія Александра Сергеевича Пушкина

*all the works of Alexander Sergeyevich Pushkin*

стихотворенія Михаила Юрьевича Лермонтова

*the poems of Michael Yurevich Lermontov*

соиненія Николая Васильевича Гоголя (пом. Гоголь),

Ивана Сергеевича Тургенева и Фёдора Михайловича

Достоевскаго

*the works of Nicholas Vasilevich Gogol' (pron. Gogal'), Ivan*

*Sergeevich Turgenev, and Theodore Mikhailovich*

*Dostoyevski*

онъ братъ Софіи Николаевны Андреевой

*he is the brother of Sophia Nikolayevna Andreyeva*

(i.e. of Mrs. or Miss Andreyev)

это имѣніе Елизавѣты Сергеевны Петровской

*this is the property of Elizabeth Sergeyevna Petrovskaya*

(i.e. of Mrs. or Miss Petrovski)

<sup>1</sup> Nom. sing. Левъ, often pronounced Lyof; левъ, pron. lyef = lion.

## CHAPTER 30

## THE EXPRESSION OF HIS, HER, THEIR

There is no possessive pronoun of the third person in Russian, and this want is supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun, e. g.:

гдѣ егѡ домъ? = *where is his house?*

это егѡ домъ = *that is his house*

это ей мужъ = *that is her husband*

это егѡ женá = *that is his wife*

онъ ей женихъ = *he is her fiancé*

она егѡ невѣста = *she is his fiancée*

это ихъ дѣти = *these are their children*

егѡ кѣмната здѣсь = *his room is here*

ей кѣмната тамъ = *her room is there*

это ихъ квартира = *this is their flat*

вотъ егѡ письмо = *here is his letter*

вотъ ей письмо = *here is her letter*

это имѣніе егѡ матери = *this is the property of his mother*

это имѣніе ей отца = *this is the property of her father*

какъ егѡ адресъ = *what (lit. how) is his address*

вотъ ей адресъ = *here is her address*

In all such cases the use of the pronoun **свой** (*one's own*) would be incorrect.

## CHAPTER 31

## VOCABULARY

## Food, drink, &amp;c.

закуска	zakúska	<i>hors-d'œuvre</i>
икрá <i>f.</i>	ikrá	<i>caviar</i>
соль <i>f.</i>	sóll'	<i>salt</i>
пéрецъ <i>m.</i>	p(y)érets	<i>pepper</i>
горчíца <i>f.</i>	garchítsa	<i>mustard</i>
хлебъ <i>m.</i>	(k)hlyéap	<i>bread, loaf</i>
бúлка <i>f.</i>	búlka	<i>little loaf, roll</i>
калáчъ <i>m.</i>	kalách	<i>a loaf with handle</i> <sup>1</sup>
сыръ <i>m.</i>	syr	<i>cheese</i>
мáсло <i>n.</i>	másla	<i>butter (also = oil)</i>
у́ксусъ <i>m.</i>	úksus	<i>vinegar</i>
пирожкóкъ <i>m.</i>	pirazhók	<i>little pie</i> <sup>1</sup>
супъ <i>m.</i>	sup	<i>soup</i>
щи <i>f. pl.</i>	shchi	<i>cabbage-soup</i> <sup>1</sup>
борщъ <i>m.</i>	borshch	<i>beetroot-soup</i> <sup>1</sup>
сметáна <i>f.</i>	sm(y)etána	<i>sour cream</i>
рыба <i>f.</i>	rýba	<i>fish</i>
рыбное <i>n.</i> <sup>2</sup>	rýbnoye <sup>2</sup>	<i>fish-course</i>
мясо <i>n.</i>	myása	<i>meat</i>
мяснóе <i>n.</i>	myasnóye	<i>meat-course</i>
жаркóе <i>n.</i>	zharkóye	<i>roast meat, joint</i>
говáдина <i>f.</i>	gavyádyina	<i>beef</i>
телятина <i>f.</i>	tyelyátyina	<i>veal</i>
барáнина <i>f.</i>	barányina	<i>mutton</i>
котлéть <i>m.</i>	katlyéat	<i>cutlet</i>
филé <i>n.</i>	flyé	<i>fillet</i>
róстбиfъ <i>m.</i>	rósbf	<i>} roast beef, steak</i>
биfштéкъ <i>m.</i>	bifshtyéaks	
соусъ <i>m.</i>	sóus	<i>sauce</i>
полíвка <i>f.</i>	palyífka	<i>gravy</i>

<sup>1</sup> National specialities.<sup>2</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

свини́на <i>f.</i>	svinyína	<i>pork</i>
бко́рокъ <i>m.</i>	ókarak	<i>a ham, gammon</i>
ветчи́на <i>f.</i>	vechiná	<i>ham (in slices)</i>
гусь <i>m.</i>	gus'	<i>goose</i>
утка <i>f.</i>	útka	<i>duck</i>
индéйка <i>f.</i>	indyéika	<i>turkey-hen</i>
кури́ца <i>f.</i>	kúritsa	<i>fowl</i>
цыплёнокъ <i>m.</i>	tsyplýónak	<i>chicken</i>
рáбчикъ <i>m.</i>	ryápchik	<i>r grouse</i>
дичь <i>f.</i>	dyích	<i>game</i>
язы́къ <i>m.</i>	yazýk	<i>tongue</i>
колбасá <i>f.</i>	kalbasá	<i>polony (sausage)</i>
сосиска <i>f.</i>	sasíska	<i>small sausage</i>
яйцó <i>n.</i>	yaitsó	<i>egg</i>
яйцó въ смýтку <i>n.</i>	yaitsó fsmýátku	<i>boiled egg</i>
яйчи́ница <i>f.</i>	yayíchnitsa	<i>scrambled eggs</i>
омлéть <i>m.</i>	amlyéat	<i>omelet</i>
ово́щъ <i>f.</i>	óvashch	<i>vegetable</i>
зéлень <i>f.</i>	z(y)élyen'	<i>green vegetable</i>
картофель <i>f.</i>	kartófel'	<i>potato(es)</i>
капúста <i>f.</i>	kapústa	<i>cabbage</i>
цвéтнáя капúста <i>f.</i>	tsv(y)etnáya kapústa	<i>cauliflower</i>
моркóвь <i>f.</i>	markóif	<i>carrot(s)</i>
свёкла <i>f.</i>	svyókla	<i>beetroot</i>
бобы <i>m. pl.</i>	babý	<i>beans</i>
рéпа <i>f.</i>	ryé <sup>a</sup> pa	<i>turnip</i>
лукъ <i>m.</i>	luk	<i>onion</i>
огурéцъ <i>m.</i>	aguryéats	<i>cucumber</i>
помидóръ <i>m.</i>	pamidór	<i>tomato</i>
рéдька <i>f.</i>	ryéit'ka	<i>radish</i>
(грибъ) грибы <i>m.</i>	(grip) gribý	<i>mushroom(s)</i>
слáдкое <i>n.<sup>1</sup></i>	slátkoye <sup>1</sup>	<i>sweet course</i>
тéсто <i>n.</i>	tyéasta	<i>dough, pastry</i>
пирóгъ <i>m.</i>	pirók	<i>pie</i>
компóтъ <i>m.</i>	kampót	<i>stewed fruit</i>
варéнье <i>n.</i>	var(y)éinye	<i>jam</i>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

(плодъ) плоды <i>m.</i>	(plot) pladý	<i>fruit (still growing)</i>
(фруктъ) фрукты <i>m.</i>	frúkty	<i>fruit (on table)</i>
мёдъ <i>m.</i>	myot	<i>honey</i>
ягода <i>f.</i>	yágada	<i>berry</i>
яблоко <i>n.</i>	yáblaka	<i>apple</i>
грúша <i>f.</i>	grúsha	<i>pear</i>
апельси́нъ <i>m.</i>	ap(y)elsín	<i>orange</i>
(вишня) ви́шни <i>f. pl.</i>	víshnyi	<i>cherries</i>
слива <i>f.</i>	slyíva	<i>plum</i>
малина <i>f.</i>	malyína	<i>raspberries</i>
клубни́ка <i>f.</i>	klubnyíka	<i>strawberries</i>
земляни́ка <i>f.</i>	zemlyanyíka	<i>strawberries (wild)</i>
смородина <i>f.</i>	smaródyina	<i>currants</i>
крыжовникъ <i>m.</i>	kryzhóvnyik	<i>gooseberries</i>
виногráдъ <i>m.</i>	vinagrát	<i>grapes</i>
ви́нная ягода <i>f.</i>	vínnaya yágada	<i>figs</i>
фи́ники <i>m. pl.</i>	finyiki	<i>dates</i>
пéрсики <i>m. pl.</i>	p(y)érsiki	<i>peaches</i>
конфéты <i>m. pl.</i>	kanfyéaty	<i>sweets</i>
шоколáдъ <i>m.</i>	shakalát	<i>chocolate</i>
бисквítы <i>m. pl.</i>	biskvíty	<i>biscuits</i>
орéхъ <i>m.</i>	aryéakh	<i>walnut</i>
лимо́нь <i>m.</i>	lyimón	<i>lemon</i>
ды́ня <i>f.</i>	dýnya	<i>melon</i>
арбу́зъ <i>m.</i>	arbús	<i>water-melon</i>
сáхаръ <i>m.</i>	sákhár	<i>sugar</i>
мороженное <i>n.<sup>1</sup></i>	marózhennoye <sup>1</sup>	<i>ice (cream)</i>
родъ <i>m.</i> <sup>ð</sup>	rot	<i>kind, quality, sort</i>
сортъ <i>m.</i> <sup>þot</sup>	sartá	
водá <i>f.</i>	vadá	<i>water</i>
кипятóкъ <i>m.</i>	kipítók	<i>boiling water</i>
пíво <i>n.</i>	píva	<i>beer</i>
вино <i>n.</i>	vinó	<i>wine</i>
вóдка <i>f.</i>	vótka	<i>vodka</i>
чай <i>m.</i>	chai	<i>tea</i>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

кофе(и) <i>m.</i>	kóf(y)e	<i>coffee</i>
молокó <i>n.</i>	malakó	<i>milk</i>
слíвки <i>f. pl.</i>	slyífki	<i>cream</i>
квась <i>m.</i>	kvas	<i>kvas</i> <sup>1</sup>
коњáкъ <i>m.</i>	kanyák	<i>cognac</i>
объдъ <i>m.</i>	abyéat	<i>dinner</i>
ўжинъ <i>m.</i>	úzhyn	<i>supper</i>
záвтракъ <i>m.</i>	záftrak	<i>lunch</i>
кусóкъ <i>m.</i>	kusók	<i>piece</i>
кусóчекъ <i>m.</i>	kusóchek	<i>bit</i>
штúка <i>f.</i>	shtúka	<i>a piece, a head, a unit</i>
табáкъ <i>m.</i>	tabák	<i>tobacco</i>
папирóса <i>f.</i>	papirósa	<i>cigarette</i>
цигáра <i>f.</i>	tsigára	<i>cigar</i>
трýбка <i>f.</i>	trúpka	<i>pipe</i>

## CHAPTER 32

## THE GENITIVE IN NEGATIONS

In simple negations the word *не* is used :

это не мой домъ = *this is not my house*

это не наша кóмната = *this is not our room*

это не селó, а дерéвня = *this is not a village, but a hamlet*

это не рубль, а тóлько полтýна (or полтýнникъ) = *this is not a rouble, but only half a rouble*

But in a great many cases the word *н'ять* meaning *no* (which is really a contraction of *не есть* = *there is not*) is used, and this always requires the genitive :

егó здéсь н'ять = *he is not here* (lit. of him here there-is-not)

еї тамъ н'ять = *she is not there*

ихъ н'ять дóма = *they are not at home*

еї н'ять дóма = *she is not at home*

<sup>1</sup> A national non-intoxicating drink made from rye and malt.

нѣть мѣста = *there is no room* (nom. sing. мѣсто, gen. sing. мѣста, nom. plur. мѣстá, gen. plur. мѣсть)

меня́ тогдá нé было дóма

*I was not at home then*

насъ тогдá нé было дóма

*we were not at home then*

тебя ужé нé было дóма тогдá

*thou wast then no longer at home*

(ужé не or ужé нѣть (*already not*) = *no longer.*)

васъ ужé нé было дóма тогдá

*you were no longer at home then*

егó ещё нé было дóма

*he was not yet at home*

её ещё нé было дóма

*she was not yet at home*

меня́ здѣсь тогдá ужé не бўдеть

*I shall no longer be here then*

насъ тогдá ужé не бўдеть тамъ

*we shall no longer be there then*

ихъ вчера́ тамъ нé было

*they were not there yesterday*

звтра ихъ здѣсь ужé не бўдеть

*to-morrow they will no longer be here*

извщика нѣть = *there is no cab*

нѣть дожд = *there is no rain*

нѣть мыла = *there is no soap*

нѣть полотнца = *there is no towel*

нѣть воды = *there is no water*

нѣть клоповъ ? = *there are no bugs ?*

больше нѣть мѣста = *there is no more room*

больше нѣть мѣстъ = *there are no more places*

дѣнегъ нѣть (nom. pl. дѣнъги) = *there is no money*

дѣнегъ совсѣмъ нѣть = *there is no money at all*

копѣйки дѣже нѣть = *not even a kopek*

In Russian two negatives are often necessary to express the negation, and they do not make an affirmative, e.g.

дома никогдѣ нѣть = *there is no one at home*

ничегдѣ здѣсь нѣть = *there is nothing here*

ни егдѣ ни ей нѣть дома = *neither he nor she is at home*

никакой надѣжды нѣть = *there is no hope (of no sort)*

никогдѣ здѣсь еще нѣть = *there is no one here yet*

никогдѣ ужѣ нѣ было тамъ = *there was no longer any one there*

никогдѣ нѣ было дома = *there was nobody at home*

нѣ былоничегдѣ = *there was nothing*

никогдѣ не бѣдетъ = *there will be no one*

ничегдѣ не бѣдетъ = *there will be nothing*

ничегдѣ не надо = *nothing is necessary*

ничегдѣ не нѣжно = *(= I don't want anything)*

(N.B. The direct object in any negative sentence after a transitive verb is always in the genitive, cf. vol. ii.)

## CHAPTER 33

### THE GENITIVE USED TO EXPRESS QUANTITY

сколько дѣнегъ? = *how much money?*

многого дѣнегъ = *a lot of money*

немногого дѣнегъ = *a little money*

дѣнегъ маѣло = *there is but little money*

скόлько часо́въ ? = *how many hours ?*

нѣско́лько часо́въ = *several hours*

скόлько разъ ? = *how many times ?*

нѣско́лько разъ = *several times*

мно́го разъ = *many times*

нѣско́лько дней = *several days*

нѣско́лько мѣсяцевъ = *several months*

нѣско́лько лѣтъ = *several years* (lit. summers)

тутъ мно́го мѣста = *there is plenty of room here*

тамъ ма́ло мѣста = *there is little (sc. not enough) room there*

нѣско́лько мѣсть багажа́ = *several pieces (lit. places) of luggage*

скόлько мѣсть (багажа́) ? = *how many pieces of luggage ?*

всего́ оди́нъ чемоданъ = *in all (lit. of all) one trunk*

скόлько нарбду (gen. sing. of нардъ) ! = *what a lot of people !*

тутъ мно́го нарбду = *there are a lot of people here*

тамъ нарбду { немнога́ } ма́ло = *there are not many people there*

скόлько людѣй ? { скόлько человѣкъ ? } = *how many people ?*

нѣско́лько людѣй { нѣско́лько человѣкъ } = *a few people, several*

чай, пожалуйста<sup>1</sup> = *some tea, please*

стаканъ чай = *a tumbler of tea*

чашка чай = *a cup of tea*

ещё молока́, пожалуйста = *some more milk, please*

ещё сливокъ = *some more cream*

<sup>1</sup> Always pronounced pазháлsta, cf. p. 12.

ещё ма́сла = *some more butter*

ещё хлеба = *some more bread*

со́ли, пожа́луйста = *some salt, please*

пे́рцу, пожа́луйста = *some pepper, please*

вотъ стака́нъ воды́ = *here is a glass of water*

вотъ стака́нъ чаю = *here is a glass of tea*

вотъ чашка чаю = *here is a cup of tea*

вотъ чашка кофею = *here is a cup of coffee*

вотъ кусо́чекъ саха́ру = *here is a bit of sugar*

вотъ кусо́къ лимо́на = *here is a piece of lemon*

вотъ кусо́къ хлеба = *here is a piece of bread*

ещё немно́жко мя́са = *a little more meat*

ещё немно́жко чаю = *a little more tea*

ещё немно́жко хлеба = *a little more bread*

ещё не́сколько бу́локъ = *a few more little loaves*

ещё не́сколько пирожкóвъ = *a few more little pies*

буты́лка винá = *a bottle of wine*

буты́лка пíва = *a bottle of beer*

рёмка вóдки = *a glass of vodka*

кусо́къ мы́ла = *a piece of soap*

горя́чей воды́, пожа́луйста = *some hot water, please*

холо́дной воды́ = *some cold water*

чи́стой воды́ = *some clean water*

се́льской воды́ = *some soda water*

немно́жко горя́чей воды́ = *a little hot water*

кипячёной воды́ = *some boiled water*

кипяткó = *some boiling water*

## CHAPTER 34

## USE OF THE NOMINATIVE AND GENITIVE AFTER NUMBERS

After 1 and all words compounded with 1, except 11, e.g. 21, 31, 101, the substantive is always in the nominative singular, e.g. :

три́дцать оди́нъ рубль	= 31 <i>roubles</i>
соро́къ однá верстá	= 41 <i>versts</i>
оди́нъ кусбкъ	= <i>one piece</i> (e.g. <i>sugar</i> )
однó мѣсто	= <i>one piece</i> ( <i>of luggage</i> )
однá копѣйка (or копéйка)	= <i>one kopek</i>

In expressing *years* two different words are used ; from 1–4, 21–24, 31–34, &c., inclusive, it is *годъ* :

оди́нъ годъ	= <i>one year</i>
два	2
три	3
четы́ре	4
двáдцать оди́нъ годъ	= <i>21 years</i>
три́дцать два гóда	= <i>32 years</i>

and from 5–20, 25–30, &c., inclusive, it is *лѣто* = *summer* :

пять лѣть	= 5 <i>years</i>
дéсять лѣть	= 10 <i>years</i>

After the numbers 2, 3, 4, and after all compounds of them such as 22, 34, 43, 52, 63, 74, the substantive is always in the genitive singular, e.g. :

два (dva) человéка	<i>two men</i>
двѣ (dvye) жéнщины	<i>two women</i>
два мѣста	<i>two places</i>
(nom. plur. мѣстá)	

два брата	<i>two brothers</i>
двѣ сестры (nom. plur. сёстры)	<i>two sisters</i>
два селá (nom. plur. сёла)	<i>two villages</i>
два дня	<i>two days</i>
двѣ нóчи (nom. sing. ночь)	<i>two nights</i>
два часá	<i>2 o'clock or 2 hours</i>
двѣ минúты	<i>2 minutes</i>
два кускá сахару	<i>two pieces of sugar</i>
двѣ чáшки чáю	<i>two cups of tea</i>
два рублý 1	<i>two roubles</i>
двѣ копéйки 2	<i>two kopeks</i>
два пýда 3	<i>two puds</i>
двѣ версты 4	<i>two versts</i>
три (tri) мáльчика	<i>three boys</i>
три д҃вóчки	<i>three little girls</i>
три бóзера (nom. sing. бóзеро, nom. plur. озёра)	<i>three lakes</i>
три рублý	<i>three roubles</i>
три копéйки	<i>three kopeks</i>
три версты	<i>three versts</i>

<sup>1</sup> 1 rouble = about 2s.<sup>3</sup> 1 pud = about 37lb.<sup>2</sup> 1 kopek =  $\frac{1}{4}d.$ <sup>4</sup> 1 verst = about  $\frac{2}{3}$  of a mile.

четыре (chetýre) сына	<i>four sons</i>
четыре дочки	<i>four daughters</i>
четыре ружья	<i>four rifles</i>
четыре рубля	<i>four roubles</i>
четыре копейки	<i>four kopeks</i>
четыре версты	<i>four versts</i>

If such words have to be put in the genitive, the noun is then in the genitive plural, e.g. :

этихъ двухъ людéй здéсь ужé нéть

*these two people (men or man and woman) are no longer here*

онъ отéцъ этихъ двухъ дéтей

*he is the father of these two children*

нéть трёхъ мéсть

*there are not three places*

нéть четырёхъ билéтовъ

*there are not four tickets.*

In certain expressions the words

двóе (dvóye) = *a couple*

трóе (tróye)

чéтверо (chétv̄era)

are used, and these always require the genitive plural e.g. :

двóе дéтей = *a couple of children*

Obs. These words must be used before nouns which are only used in the plural.

When an adjective is placed between a number and a noun it can be in either the nominative plural or genitive plural, e.g. :

два красивые мальчика  
or два красивыхъ мальчика } =two pretty boys

две красивыя девочки  
or две красивыхъ девочки } =two pretty little girls

After the numbers 5–20, 25–30, 35–40, &c., inclusive, the substantive is always in the genitive plural, e.g. :

пять (pyá't') рублéй                    5 roubles

пять копéекъ                            5 kopeks

пять сúтокъ                            5 days and nights

шесть (sheist') дней                    6 days

шесть ночей                            6 nights

семь (syeim') мéсяцевъ                    7 months

семь недéль                            7 weeks

вóсемь (vó'syem') часóвъ                    8 o'clock or 8 hours

вóсемь грýвенъ                            80 kopeks

(nom. sing. грýвна was 10 kopeks ; the name for the coin of 10 kopeks is now грýвенникъ)

дéвять (dyéivyat') сыновéй                    9 sons

дéвять дочерéй                            9 daughters

дéвять аршíнъ<sup>1</sup>                            9 arshins

(nom. sing. аршíнъ, gen. plur. аршíнъ)

дéсять (dyéisyat') человéкъ                    10 men or 10 people

(человéкъ is the gen. plur. of человéкъ, and after numbers is always used instead of людéй ; it includes men and women)

дéсять мéстъ                            10 places

дéсять пудóвъ                            10 puds

<sup>1</sup> 1 arshin = about a yard.

оди́ннадцать часо́въ                    11 *o'clock or 11 hours*  
 (adyínatsat')

оди́ннадцать ты́сячъ                    11,000

оди́ннадцать десятый<sup>1</sup>                    11 *desyatins*

две́нáдцать часо́въ                    12 *o'clock or 12 hours*  
 (dvyenátsat')

две́нáдцать ты́сячъ                    12,000

две́нáдцать вёрстъ                    12 *versts*

трина́дцать	trinátsat'	13
четы́рнадцать	chetýrnatsat'	14
пятнáдцать	pitnátsat'	15
шестнáдцать	shesnátsat'	16
семнáдцать	s(y)emnátsat'	17
восемнáдцать	vos(y)emnátsat'	18
девятнáдцать	dyev(y)atnátsat'	19
двáдцать	dvátsat'	20
трíдцать	trítsat'	30
сóрокъ	sórak	40
пятьдесáтъ	pidisyát	50
шестьдесáтъ	shesdyesyát	60
сéмьдесáтъ	syé'mdyesyat	70
вóсемьдесáтъ	vósyemdyesyat	80
девяно́сто	dyevyanósta	90
сто	sto	100
две́сти	dvyé'styi	200
трíста	trista	300
четы́реста	chetýresta	400
пять сотъ	pyá'i' sot	500
ты́сяча	týsyacha	1,000

<sup>1</sup> (nom. десятýна) 1 desyatin = about 3 acres.

два́дцать арши́нь	20 <i>arshins</i>
два́дцать-пять рублéй	25 <i>roubles</i>
три́дцать пудóвъ	30 <i>puds</i>
соро́къ десятíнъ	40 <i>desyatins</i>
пятьдеся́ть вёрстъ	50 <i>versts</i>

The expression  $1\frac{1}{2}$  requires the gen. sing.:

полторá (paltará) гóда	<i>a year and a half</i>
полторá мéсяца	<i>a month and a half</i>
полторá рублý	<i>a rouble and a half</i>
полторы́ версты́	<i>a verst and a half</i>
полторы́ сажéни	<i>a fathom and a half</i>
(nom. sing. сáженъ)	

The word for *half* (половíна) is in many cases cut down as follows:

полстакáна	<i>half a tumblerful</i>
полбуты́лки	<i>a half-bottle</i>
полфúнта	$\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
полчасá	<i>half an hour</i>

## CHAPTER 35

### USE OF THE GENITIVE IN THE EXPRESSION OF TIME

котóрый часъ? = *what time is it?*

часъ = *one o'clock* (lit. = *hour*)

половíна вторóго } = 1.30 (lit. = *a half of the second, sc. hour*)  
palavína ftaróva }

два часá = *2 o'clock*

чéтверть трéтьяго  
chétvert' trétyava } = 2.15 (lit. = *a quarter of the third*)

три часá = 3 o'clock

пять минúтъ четвёртаго = 3.5

четыре часá = 4 o'clock

безъ пятí (минутъ) пять = 4.55 (lit. = *without 5 min. 5*)

пять часóвъ = 5 o'clock

двáдцать минúтъ шестóго  
dvátsat' minút shestóva } = 5.20

шесть часóвъ = 6 o'clock

дéсять минúтъ седьмóго  
dyéis(y)at' minút syed'móva } = 6.10

семь часóвъ = 7 o'clock

двáдцать пять минúтъ восьмóго  
dvátsat' pyat' minút vas'móva } = 7.25

вóсемь часóвъ = 8 o'clock

безъ двадцатí дéвять = 8.40

половíна девятаго  
dyevyátava } = 8.30

дéвять часóвъ = 9 o'clock

чéтверть десятаго  
dyesyátava } = 9.15

безъ чéтверти дéсять  
bes chétvertyi } = 9.45

дéсять часóвъ = 10 o'clock

половíна одínnadцатаго = 10.30

безъ двадцатí пяти одínnadцать = 10.35

одínnadцать часóвъ = 11 o'clock

безъ чéтверти двénnáдцать = 11.45

двénnáдцать часóвъ = 12 o'clock

половíна пéрваго = 12.30 (lit. = *half of the first, sc. hour*)

безъ десяти минúтъ часъ = 12.50

## CHAPTER 36

## USE OF THE GENITIVE IN EXPRESSING THE DATE

трéтьяго дня = *the day before yesterday* (lit. of the third day)  
 пéрваго <sup>1</sup> январý = *on the 1st of January*  
 вторóго февралý = *on the 2nd of February*  
 трéтьяго мáрта = *on the 3rd of March*  
 четвéртаго апрéля = *on the 4th of April*  
 пýтаго мáя = *on the 5th of May*  
 шестóго ióня = *on the 6th of June*  
 седьмóго ióля = *on the 7th of July*  
 восьмóго áвгуста = *on the 8th of August*  
 девáйтаго сентябрý = *on the 9th of September*  
 десáйтаго октябрý = *on the 10th of October*  
 одíннадцатаго ноябрý = *on the 11th of November*  
 двéнáдцатаго декабрý = *on the 12th of December*  
 тринáдцатаго январý = *on the 13th of January*  
 четýрнадцатаго февралý = *on the 14th of February*  
 пятнáдцатаго мáрта = *on the 15th of March*  
 шестнáдцатаго апрéля = *on the 16th of April*  
 семнáдцатаго мáя = *on the 17th of May*  
 восемнáдцатаго ióня = *on the 18th of June*  
 девятнáдцатаго ióля = *on the 19th of July*  
 двадцáтаго áвгуста = *on the 20th of August*  
 двáдцать пéрваго сентябрý = *on the 21st of September*  
 двáдцать вторóго октябрý = *on the 22nd of October*  
 тридцáтаго ноябрý = *on the 30th of November*  
 тридцать пéрваго декабрý = *on the 31st of December*

<sup>1</sup> sc. числá, gen. sing. of числó = *date or number.*

котóраго числá вы бýдете дóма ?  
*what date will you be at home ?*

сего́дня пе́рвое янва́рья  
*to-day is the 1st of January*

in the nominative.

CHAPTER 37

## EXPRESSION OF COMPARISON

Comparison is expressed in two ways, either by чѣмъ (or нежели) followed by the nominative, or by means of the genitive of comparison, e.g. :

éто óчень хоро́шій по́ездъ  
*this is a very good train*

(1) э́тотъ по́ездъ лúчше чёмъ тотъ  
 (2) э́тотъ по́ездъ лúчше тогó  
*this train is better than that*

это бчень плохая дорого  
*this is a very bad road*

(1) эта дорожка хуже та  
 (2) эта дорожка хуже той  
*this road is worse than that*

это очень большое озеро  
*this is a very large lake*

(1) это бóзеро бóльше чéмъ то

(2) это бóзеро бóльше тогó

*this lake is bigger than that*

это бóченъ ма́ленький домъ

*this is a very small house*

(1) э́ти домá мéньше чéмъ тѣ

(2) э́ти домá мéньше тѣхъ

*these houses are smaller than those*

это бóченъ вы́сокая горá

*this is a very high hill*

э́ти гóры вы́ше тѣхъ

*these hills (or mountains) are higher than those*

тѣ гóры нíже э́тихъ

*those hills are lower than these*

Невá—широ́кая, глубóкая и бы́страя рѣкá

*the Neva is a broad, deep, and swift river*

Невá горáздо ши́ре и глúбже и быстрѣе Тéмзы

*the Neva is much broader, deeper, and more rapid than  
the Thames*

но Невá бóченъ корóткая рѣкá

*but the Neva is a very short river*

Невá горáздо корóче Тéмзы

*the Neva is much shorter than the Thames*

Темза—у́зкая, мéлкая и тíхая рѣкá

*the Thames is a narrow, shallow, and slow river*

Тéмза горáздо ýже <sup>1</sup> и мéльче и тýше Невы  
*the Thames is much narrower, shallower, and slower than the Neva*

но Тéмза довóльно дли́нная рéкá  
*but the Thames is a fairly long river*

Тéмза горáздо длиннýе Невы  
*the Thames is much longer than the Neva*

это бчень дорогáя вещь  
*that is a very precious (sc. expensive) thing*

вáше издánie сочинéнй Пúшкина дорóже и лúчше моегó  
*your edition of the works of Pushkin is more expensive and better than mine*

это бчень дешёвая бумáга  
*that is very cheap paper*

моё издánie стихотворéнй Лéрмонтова дешéвле и хúже  
 вáшего

*my edition of the poems of Lermontov is cheaper and worse than yours*

это бчень стáрая лóшадь  
*that is a very old horse*

это совсéмъ молодáя лóшадь  
*that is quite a young horse*

онъ горáздо стáрше менá  
*he is much older than I*

я горáздо молóже егó  
*I am much younger than he*

<sup>1</sup> ýже =*narrower*, ужé =*already*.

рýсскíй язы́къ очень трóдный  
*the Russian language is very difficult*

нѣмѣцкíй и францúзскíй язы́кі тóже трóдные  
*the German and French languages are also difficult*

но а́нглійскíй язы́къ лёгкíй  
*but the English language is easy*

а́нглійскíй язы́къ лéгче францúзскаго и тákже лéгче  
 нѣмѣцкаго

*the English language is easier than French and also easier  
 than German*

рýсскíй язы́къ труднѣе а́нглійскаго, и дáже труднѣе  
 нѣмѣцкаго и францúзскаго ; онъ труднѣе всѣхъ  
*the Russian language is more difficult than English, and  
 even more difficult than German and French ; it is the  
 most difficult of all*

мо́й чемодáнъ пустóй и совсéмъ лёгкíй  
*my trunk is empty and quite light*

онъ горáздо лéгче вáшего  
*it is much lighter than yours*

да, мо́й чемодáнъ совсéмъ пóлный и слишкомъ тяжёлый  
*yes, my trunk is quite full and too heavy*

онъ горáздо тяжелéе (or тяжéле) вáшего  
*it is much heavier than yours*

икrá тепéрь дорóже прéжняго  
*caviar is now dearer than formerly*

Пётръ стáрше Пáвла  
*Peter is older than Paul*

Серёжа стáрше Мíши

*Serge is older than Michael*

Мáша и Катя молóже Сóни

*Mary and Kate are younger than Sophia*

úтро вéчера мудренéе

*morning than evening is wiser (proverb)*

сегóдня холоднéе вчерáшняго (sc. дня)

*to-day it is colder than yesterday('s day)*

сегóдня теплéе вчерáшняго (sc. дня)

*to-day it is warmer than yesterday('s day)*

онá краси́вée своéй сестры

*she is more beautiful than her (own) sister*

онъ сильнéе меня, онъ óчень сильный

*he is stronger than I, he is very strong*

этотъ кóфе слíшкомъ слáбый

*this coffee is too weak*

этотъ чай слíшкомъ крéпкий

*this tea is too strong*

этотъ кóфе крéпче = *this coffee is stronger*

этотъ чай слабéе = *this tea is weaker*

эта водá совсéмъ холóдная

*this water is quite cold*

этотъ супъ слíшкомъ горячíй

*this soup is too hot*

вотъ эта водá бúдетъ горячéе

*here this water will be hotter*

это винó крѣпче тогó  
*this wine is stronger than that*

это пíво слабѣе тогó  
*this beer is weaker than that*

эти пирожкí бчень вкúсные  
*these little pies are very nice*

онí горáздо вкуси́ще тѣхъ  
*they are much nicer than those*

это бчень богáтый гбродъ  
*this is a very rich town*

Москвá богáче Петрогráда  
*Moscow is richer than Petrograd*

Нéвскíй Проспéктъ бчень длíнная, ширóкая и красíвая  
 ўлица  
*the Nevski Prospect is a very long, broad, and beautiful  
 street*

онъ длини́ще, шире и красивѣе всѣхъ други́хъ ўлицъ  
*it is longer, broader, and more beautiful than all other streets*

нигдѣ нѣть тако́й длінной, широкой и краси́вой ўлицы  
*nowhere (sc. else) is there such a long, broad, and beautiful  
 street*

это бчень скóрый поѣздъ  
*this is a very fast train*

но тотъ былъ ещѣ скорѣе  
*but that (other) one was still faster*

это бчень тихiй (*or* мéдленный) поѣздъ  
*this is a very slow train*

а тотъ бўдеть ёшё тйше

*but that (other) one will be still slower*

скорѣе (or по-скорѣе) != *quick! hurry up!*

тйше (or по-тйшему) != *go slow! not so fast!*

The words for *far* and *near* are frequently used adverbially :

театръ совсѣмъ близко

*the theatre is quite near*

ихъ имѣніе близко нашего (or отъ нашего)

*their property is near ours*

Петроградъ отсюда ближе чѣмъ Москвѣ

*Petrograd is nearer from here (lit. hence) than Moscow*

вокзаль бчень далеко (or далѣко)

*the station (sc. big station or terminus) is very far*

пристань ёшё дѣльше

*the landing-stage is still further*

гостиница отсюда далеко

*the hotel is far from here*

вокзаль немножко дѣльше гостиницы

*the station is a little further than the hotel*

гостиница ближе отсюда чѣмъ вокзаль

*the hotel is nearer here than the station*

The word *по* is often added to the comparative :

по-больше молокѣ, пожалуйста

*rather more milk, please*

по-меньше мяса, пожалуйста

*rather less meat, please*

Adverbial comparatives :

онъ всегдá бóлень, бóлъе и́ли мéнъе  
*he is always ill, more or less*

и такъ дáлъе (и.т.д.)  
*and so forth*

## CHAPTER 38

### VOCABULARY

#### The human body, health, &c.

тѣло <i>n.</i>	tyéala	<i>body</i>
душá <i>f.</i>	dushá	<i>soul</i>
духъ <i>m.</i>	dukh	<i>spirit</i>
головá <i>f.</i>	galavá	<i>head</i>
шéя <i>f.</i>	shéya	<i>neck</i>
лицó <i>n.</i>	lyitsó	<i>face (also person)</i>
глазъ(-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	glas, glazá	<i>eye(s)</i>
носъ <i>m.</i>	nos	<i>nose</i>
щекá <i>f.</i>	shcheká	<i>cheek</i>
ротъ <i>m.</i>	rot	<i>mouth</i>
ўхо <i>n.</i>	úkho	<i>ear</i>
(ўши <i>pl.</i>	úshi	<i>ears)</i>
лобъ <i>m.</i>	lop	<i>forehead</i>
затылокъ <i>m.</i>	zatýlak	<i>back of head</i>
гóрло <i>n.</i>	górla	<i>throat</i>
зубъ <i>m.</i>	zup	<i>tooth</i>
губá <i>f.</i>	gubá	<i>lip</i>
дёсна <i>f.</i>	dyósna	<i>gum</i>
языкъ <i>m.</i>	yazýk	<i>tongue</i>
усы <i>m. pl.</i>	usý	<i>moustache</i>
бородá <i>f.</i>	baradá	<i>beard</i>
подбородокъ <i>m.</i>	padbaródak	<i>chin</i>
бакенбáрды <i>f. pl.</i>	bakenbárdy	<i>whiskers</i>
волосы <i>m. pl.</i>	vólosy	<i>hair (collective)</i>
кóжа <i>f.</i>	kózha	<i>skin</i>

плечо <i>n.</i>	plyečo	shoulder
(плéчи <i>pl.</i> )	plyé¹chi	shoulders)
спинá <i>f.</i>	spiná	back
рукá <i>f.</i>	ruká	arm, hand
кисть <i>f.</i>	kist'	wrist
лóкоть <i>m.</i>	lókat'	elbow
пáлецъ <i>m.</i>	pályets	finger, toe
нóготь <i>m.</i>	nógat'	nail
ногá <i>f.</i>	nagá	leg, foot
бедрó <i>n.</i>	b(y)edró	hip
колéно(-и) <i>n. (pl.)</i>	kalyé¹na	knee(s)
ступéнь <i>m.</i>	stupyé¹in'	foot
пятá <i>f.</i>	pyatá	heel
подóшва <i>f.</i>	padóshva	sole
живóтъ <i>m.</i>	zhivót	{ stomach
желúдокъ <sup>1</sup> <i>m.</i>	zhelúdak	
сéрдце <i>n.</i>	s(y)é¹rtse	heart
лёгkия <i>n. pl. (adj.)</i>	lyókhkiya	lungs
кость <i>f.</i>	kó¹st'	bone
кровь <i>f.</i>	kró¹f'	blood
боль <i>f.</i>	bóil'	pain
здорóвье <i>n.</i>	zdaróvye	health
болéзнь <i>f.</i>	balyé¹zn'	illness
лихорáдка <i>f.</i>	lyikharátka	fever
воспалéніе <i>n.</i>	vaspalyé¹niye	inflammation
температúра <i>f.</i>	tyemperatúra	temperature
грáдусникъ <i>m.</i>	grádusnyik	thermometer
грáдусъ <i>m.</i>	grádus	degree
кашель <i>m.</i>	káshel'	cough
простúда <i>f.</i>	prastúda	cold in the chest
насморкъ <i>m.</i>	násmark	cold in the head
чахótка <i>f.</i>	chakhótka	consumption
дóкторъ <i>m.</i>	dóktar	{ doctor
врачъ <i>m.</i>	vrach	
лекárство <i>n.</i>	lyekárstva	
лечéбница <i>f.</i>	lyechébnitsa	
апtéка <i>f.</i>	aptyé¹ka	chemist's

<sup>1</sup> A politer word.

## CHAPTER 39

## VOCABULARY

## Animal and plant life

жизнь <i>f.</i>	zhizn'	life
смерть <i>f.</i>	sm(y)ért'	death
животное <sup>1</sup> <i>n.</i> ( <i>adj.</i> )	zhyvótnoye <sup>1</sup>	animal
звѣрь <i>m.</i>	zv(y)éir'	beast
лошадь <i>f.</i>	lóshat'	{ horse
лошадка <i>f.</i>	lashátka	
жеребёнокъ <i>m.</i>	zherebyónak	foal
конь <i>m.</i>	kó'n'	steed
собака <i>f.</i>	sabáka	dog
пёсъ <i>m.</i>	pyos	hound
щенокъ <i>m.</i>	shchenók	puppy
котъ <i>m.</i>	kot	{ cat
кошка <i>f.</i>	kóshka	
котёнокъ <i>m.</i>	katyónak	kitten
быкъ <i>m.</i>	byk	ox
корова <i>f.</i>	karóva	cow
тёлёнокъ <i>m.</i>	tyelyónak	calf
овца <i>f.</i>	aftsá	sheep
баранъ <i>m.</i>	barán	ram, sheep
барашекъ <i>m.</i>	baráshek	{ lamb
ягнёнокъ <i>m.</i>	yagnyónak	
козёлъ <i>m.</i>	kazyól	he-goat
козла <i>f.</i>	kazlá	she-goat
козлёнокъ <i>m.</i>	kazlyónak	kid
свинья <i>f.</i>	svinyá	pig
поросёнокъ <i>m.</i>	parasyónak	young pig
пѣтухъ <i>m.</i>	p(y)etúkh	cock
курица <i>f.</i>	kúritsa	hen
цыплёнокъ <i>m.</i>	tsyplyónak	chicken
осёлъ <i>m.</i>	asyól	donkey
верблюдъ <i>m.</i>	verblyút	camel
слонъ <i>m.</i>	slon	elephant

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

левъ <i>m.</i>	lyé <sup>a</sup> f	lion
тигръ <i>m.</i>	tyígr	tiger
медвѣдь <i>m.</i>	medv(y)éit'	bear
волкъ <i>m.</i>	volk	wolf
лиса <i>f.</i>	lyisá	} fox
лисица <i>f.</i>	lyisítsa	
заяцъ <sup>1</sup> <i>m.</i>	záyats	hare
крѣликъ <i>m.</i>	królyik	rabbit
бѣлка <i>f.</i>	byéalka	squirrel
соболь <i>f.</i>	sabóil'	sable
оленъ <i>m.</i>	alyéln'	deer
лось <i>m.</i>	lóls'	elk
обезъяна <i>f.</i>	abezyána	monkey
лягушка <i>f.</i>	lyagúshka	frog
гнѣздо <i>n.</i>	gnyezdó	nest
птица <i>f.</i>	ptyítsa	bird
орѣль <sup>2</sup> <i>m.</i>	aryól	eagle
журавль <i>m.</i>	zhuráivl'	crane
глубь <sup>3</sup> <i>m.</i>	gólp'	dove, pigeon
соловей <i>m.</i>	salavyéi	nightingale
воробей <i>m.</i>	varabyéi	sparrow
ласточка <i>f.</i>	lástachka	swallow
змѣя <i>f.</i>	zmeyá	snake
рыба <i>f.</i>	rýba	fish
лососина <i>f.</i>	lasasína	} salmon
сѣмга <i>f.</i>	syómga	
сельдь <i>f.</i>	syéil'd'	herring
насѣкомуе <sup>4</sup> <i>n.</i>	nas(y)ekómoye <sup>4</sup>	} insect
букашка <i>f.</i>	bukáshka	
муха <i>f.</i>	múkha	fly
комаръ <i>m.</i>	kamár	gnat, mosquito
пчелѣ <i>f.</i>	pchelá	bee
оса <i>f.</i>	asá	wasp
блохѣ <i>f.</i>	blakhá	flea

<sup>1</sup> Gen. sing. заяца.

<sup>2</sup> Also the name of the town *Orel*, pron. Aryól.

<sup>3</sup> голубчикъ (*m.*), голубушка (*f.*) = my dear.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

таракáнь <i>m.</i>	tarakán	<i>cockroach</i>
клопъ <i>m.</i>	klop	<i>bug</i>
растéніе <i>n.</i>	rastyéniye	<i>plant</i>
дéрево <i>n.</i>	dyéreve	<i>tree</i>
дубъ <i>m.</i>	dup	<i>oak</i>
берёза <i>f.</i>	beryóza	<i>birch-tree</i>
тóполь <i>m.</i>	tópal'	<i>poplar</i>
соснá <i>f.</i>	sasná	<i>Scotch fir</i>
(ель) ёлка <i>f.</i>	yólka	<i>spruce fir</i>
цвéтóкъ <i>m.</i>	tsv(y)etók	<i>a blossom</i>
цвéты <i>m. pl.</i>	tsv(y)etý	<i>flowers</i>
róза <i>f.</i>	róza	<i>rose</i>
фиáлка <i>f.</i>	fiyálka	<i>violet</i>
гвоздíка <i>f.</i>	gvazdyíka	<i>pink</i>
макъ <i>m.</i>	mak	<i>poppy</i>
незабúдка <i>f.</i>	nyezabútka	<i>forget-me-not</i>
яблоня <i>f.</i>	yáblonya	<i>apple-tree</i>
сирéнь <i>f.</i>	siréin'	<i>lilac</i>
рожь <i>f.</i>	róish	<i>rye</i>
пшени́ца <i>f.</i>	pshenyítsa	<i>wheat</i>
ячмénь <i>m.</i>	yachméin'	<i>barley</i>
овёсь <i>m.</i>	avyós	<i>oats</i>
гречíха <i>f.</i>	grechíkha	<i>buckwheat</i>
прóсо <i>n.</i>	prósa	<i>millet</i>
кукурúзъ <i>m.</i>	kukurús	<i>maize</i>
травá <i>f.</i>	travá	<i>grass</i>
сéно <i>n.</i>	syéna	<i>hay</i>
урожáй <i>m.</i>	urazhái	<i>harvest (good)</i>
неурожáй <i>m.</i>	nyeurazhái	<i>bad harvest</i>
зásуха <i>f.</i>	zásukha	<i>drought</i>
жáтва <i>f.</i>	zhátva	<i>reaping</i>
снопъ <i>m.</i>	snop	<i>sheaf</i>
садъ <i>m.</i>	sat	<i>garden</i>
огорóдъ <i>m.</i>	agarót	<i>kitchen garden</i>
дорóжка <i>f.</i>	daróshka	<i>path</i>
цвéтни́къ <i>m.</i>	tsv(y)etnyík	<i>flower-bed</i>
грáдка <i>f.</i>	gryátka	<i>vegetable-bed</i>

## CHAPTER 40

## THE VERB TO HAVE

## The Present

Although there is a verb *to have*<sup>1</sup> in Russian, by far the most common means of expressing the idea is by a paraphrase *to be in the possession of* followed by the genitive; this expression is formed by the preposition *у = in the possession of* (also *at the house of* or *near*), by the genitive of the personal pronoun, and by *есть* (*ye<sup>ist'</sup>*) = *is*, which is all that is left of the present tense of the verb *to be*, e.g.:

у менéй есть	= <i>I have</i>
у тебéй есть	= <i>thou hast</i>
у негó есть	= <i>he has, it has</i>
у ней есть	= <i>she has</i>
у насЬ есть	= <i>we have</i>
у васЬ есть	= <i>you have</i>
у нихъ есть	= <i>they have</i>

The word *есть* is omitted more often than not, and can also be placed first.

у менéй собáка	}	= <i>I have a dog</i>
у менéй есть собáка		
есть у менéй собáка		

but N.B.

собáка у менéй	= <i>I have the dog or the dog is with me</i>
----------------	---

<sup>1</sup> Inf. имéть, pres. имéю, имéешь, имéеть имéемъ, имéете, имéютъ.

у теб́я кни́га  
 у теб́я есть кни́га  
 есть у теб́я кни́га } = *thou hast a book*

but

кни́га у теб́я = *thou hast the book*

It will have been noticed that the words *егó*, *её*, and *ихъ* are prefixed by the letter *и*; this *и* is inserted whenever these words are preceded and governed by a preposition, e.g. :

у негó письмó  
 у негó есть письмó  
 есть у негó письмó } = *he has a letter*

but

письмó у негó = *he has the letter*

у ней дочка  
 у ней есть дочка  
 есть у ней дочка } = *she has a daughter*

but

дочка у ней = *the daughter is with her*

у нась паспортъ  
 паспортъ у нась = *we have a passport*  
 = *we have the passport*

у васъ дёньги  
 дёньги у васъ = *you have money*  
 = *you have the money*

у нихъ билéты  
 билéты у нихъ = *they have tickets*  
 = *they have the tickets*

When the verb is used interrogatively the interrogative particle -ли may be added, but is not necessary if the

voice is sufficiently raised to indicate interrogation; in indefinite questions есть must be added, e.g.:

есть ли у тебя́ кошелёкъ ?	}	= <i>hast thou a purse?</i>
есть у тебя́ кошелёкъ ?		
у тебя́ есть кошелёкъ ?		
у тебя́ кошелёкъ есть ?		

кошелёкъ у тебя́ есть ?

but

кошелёкъ у тебя́ ?	}	= <i>hast thou the purse?</i>
у тебя́ ли кошелёкъ ?		

есть ли у васъ дёныги ?

есть у васъ дёныги ?

у васъ есть дёныги ?

дёныги у васъ есть ?

дёныги есть у васъ ?

}	= <i>have you any money?</i>	
		у васъ есть дёныги ?
		дёныги у васъ есть ?
		дёныги есть у васъ ?

but

дёныги у васъ ?	}	= <i>have you the money?</i>
у васъ ли дёныги ?		

### Phrases containing the word 'to have'

какой у васъ красивый домъ

*what a beautiful house you have*

какая у васъ прекрасная квартира

*what a splendid flat you have*

какие у васъ прелестные глаза

*what exquisite eyes you have*

у васъ очень плохой видъ

*you look very ill (lit. have a bad look)*

у него очень здоровый видъ  
*he looks very well*

сколько у васъ дѣтей ?  
*how many children have you ?*

сколько у васъ мѣстъ багажа ?  
*how many pieces of luggage have you ?*

у насъ всего троє дѣтей  
*we have in all three children*

у менѧ четыре мѣста багажа  
*I have four pieces of luggage*

у менѧ очень много вещей  
*I have a great many things*

у неї очень мало денегъ  
*she has very little money*

у нихъ нѣсколько имѣній  
*they have several properties*

у менѧ нѣсколько изданій этой книги  
*I have several editions of this book*

у васъ собака есть ?  
*have you a dog ?*

у менѧ даже двѣ  
*I have even got two*

у нихъ есть свой автомобиль  
*they have their own motor-car*

у неї есть свой домъ  
*she has her own house*

у нась есть свой экипáжи  
*we have our own carriages*

у этого ребёнка оченъ красивые глазá  
*this child has very beautiful eyes*

у этой бáрыши оченъ хорошie зúбы  
*this young lady has very good teeth*

у этой дáмы прелéстные вóлосы  
*this lady has exquisite hair*

у этого человéка оченъ большóй ротъ  
*this man has a very large mouth*

у этого стариká длíнная бородá  
*this old man has a long beard*

у этого мáльчика оченъ мнóго волóсъ (gen. pl.)  
*this boy has a great deal of hair*

у этой дéвушки оченъ мáленьkíя úши  
*this girl has very small ears*

у этого человéка оченъ ширóкíя плéчи  
*this man has very broad shoulders*

у этой жéнчины оченъ непríятный гóлосъ  
*this woman has a very unpleasant voice*

у вáшей собáки прелéстная головá  
*your dog has a lovely head*

у этого человéка большíя úши, мáленьkíе глазá, корóткíя  
 ноги и длíнныя рúки (úши, глазá, ноги, and рúки :  
 nom. plur.)

*this man has large ears, small eyes, short legs, and long arms*

у кáждаго человéка два ýха, два глáза, двé ногí и двé  
рукí (gen. sing.)

*every man has two ears, two eyes, two legs, and two arms*

у менá простýда = *I have a cold in the chest*

у негó наsmоркъ = *he has a cold in the head*

у ней кáшель = *she has a cough*

## CHAPTER 41

### NEGATION OF THE VERB TO HAVE

(cf. p. 109.)

у менá нéть собáки = *I have no dog*

у менá нéть дéнегъ = *I have no money*

у негó нéТЬ родítелей = *he has no parents*

у ней нéТЬ дéтей = *she has no children*

у нась нéТЬ билéтовъ = *we have no tickets*

у нихъ нéТЬ багажá = *they have no luggage*

у менá нéТЬ ни собáки ни кóшки

*I have neither dog nor cat*

у негó ни отцá ни мáтери нéТЬ, онъ сиротá

*he has neither father nor mother, he is an orphan*

у ней нéТЬ ни бráта ни сестры́, онá совсéмъ однá

*she has neither brother nor sister, she is quite alone*

у нась и пáспортъ и билéты есть

*we have both passport and tickets*

пáспортъ у нихъ есть, а билéтовъ нéТЬ

*they have a passport, but no tickets*

### Questions in the Present

are often asked negatively :

нѣтъ ли у тебѣ пера ?  
*hast thou a pen ?*

перо есть, а бумаги нѣтъ  
*I have a pen, but no paper*

бумага есть, а чернилъ нѣтъ  
*I have paper, but no ink*

чернила тутъ, и вотъ карандашъ  
*here is the ink, and here is a pencil*

нѣтъ ли у васъ днегъ ?  
*have you any money ?*

## CHAPTER 42

### TO HAVE (CONTINUED)

#### The Past

of *to have* is expressed as follows :

у менѣ былъ братъ	= <i>I had a brother</i>
у менѣ была сестра	= <i>I had a sister</i>
у менѣ было дѣло	= <i>I had business</i>
у менѣ были родители	= <i>I had parents</i>

that is to say, the verb *was* must agree with what in Russian is the subject but in English is the object in such phrases ; similarly :

у него́ было́ соба́ка = *he had a dog*

у неё́ было́ домъ = *she had a house*

у нихъ́ было́ имъ́ние = *they had a property*

у моего́ отца́ было́ имъ́ние = *my father had a property*

у моей́ ма́тери было́ имъ́ние = *my mother had a property*

The neuter singular было́ is sometimes used even when the object referred to is in the plural, e.g. :

у него́ было́ двѣ́ дочери = *he had two daughters*

у неё́ было́ два сына = *she had two sons*

When negated the neuter is invariably used, the word не withdrawing the accent from the verb.

у менѧ́ нé-было́ дéнегъ = *I had no money*

у него́ нé-было́ ничегó = *he had nothing*

у неё́ нé-было́ надéжды = *she had no hope*

у менѧ́ нé-было́ ни однóй копéйки = *I hadn't a single kopek*

у него́ нé-было́ никакихъ́ дéнегъ = *he had no money at all*

у неё́ никогда́ нé-было́ дѣтей = *she never had any children*

у нась́ нé-было́ никогó = *we had no one*.

When using the word никтó = *no one*, the preposition divides the ни from the кто.

ни у кого́ нé было́ дéнегъ = *no one had any money*

### The Future

of *to have* is expressed as follows :

у менѧ́ бýдетъ́ автомо́биль = *I shall have a motor-car*

у тебѧ́ бýдетъ́ лóшадь = *thou wilt have a horse*

у него́ бýдетъ́ домъ = *he will have a house*

у неё́ бýдетъ́ садъ = *she will have a garden*

у нась́ бýдетъ́ ро́йль = *we shall have a grand piano*

у васъ бўдеть мнобо багажа ?

*shall you have much luggage ?*

у нихъ бўдеть бчень мало врёмени

*they will have very little time*

у него бўдуть гости (nom. sing. гость) = *he will have visitors*

у неї бўдуть дёныги = *she will have money*

In negative sentences the third pers. singular is always used :

у меня не бўдетъ дёнергъ = *I shall have no money*

у насъ не бўдетъ мѣста = *we shall have no room*

у нихъ не бўдетъ гостей = *they will have no visitors*

у меня ничего не бўдетъ = *I shall have nothing*

## CHAPTER 43

### PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE GENITIVE

y = *at the house of, near*

It must be understood that this preposition is often used in the above meanings as well as in that of 'in the possession of', e.g. :

я былъ у неї вчера = *I was at her house, or, I went to see her yesterday*

она вчера была у насъ = *she came to see us yesterday*

вы были у нихъ вчера ? = *did you go to see them yesterday ?*

третьяго дня я былъ у вашего отца

*the day before yesterday I went to see your father (lit. of the third day I was at your father's)*

трéтьяго дня онá была у менá

*she came to see me the day before yesterday*

онъ сего́дня у неё = *he is at her house to-day*

онá сего́дня у него́ = *she is at his house to-day*

онъ бúдетъ у нась сего́дня

*he is coming to see us to-day*

вы бúдете у нихъ сего́дня ?

*are you going to see them to-day ?*

я бúду у нихъ зáвтра

*I am going to see them to-morrow*

послѣзáвтра они́ бúдутъ у нась

*they are coming to see us the day after to-morrow*

мы бúдемъ у неё сего́дня

*we are going to see her to-day*

ты бúдешь у него́ зáвтра ?

*art thou going to see him to-morrow ?*

Obs. When the preposition does not directly govern the words егó, её, and ихъ, i.e. when these words are used in the meaning of *his*, *her*, and *their*, the н is not inserted, e.g. :

у егó отца было имéниe

*his father had a property*

у егó ма́тери было оченъ мнóго дéнегъ

*his mother had a great deal of money*

у её бра́та былъ хорóшíй ро́йль

*her brother had a nice grand piano*

у её сестры оченъ красíвые вóлосы

*her sister has very beautiful hair*

## 144 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING GENITIVE

у ихъ родитѣлѣй бочень большаѧ библіотека  
*their parents have a very large library*

у ихъ дѣтѣй бочень многаѧ книгъ  
*their children have a great many books*

безъ = *without*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : безо)

онъ безъ билета = *he is without a ticket*

безъ паспорта нельзѧ = *without a passport it is impossible*

безъ этого нельзѧ = *this is indispensable (it is impossible without this)*

это было безъ менѧ = *that was in my absence*

безо всегó = *without anything* (lit. all)

безъ соли, безъ хлѣба — половина обѣда

*without salt and without bread is only half a dinner (proverb)*

для = *for*

для когó это письмό ? = *for whom is this letter ?*

для чегó это такъ ? = *why is this like that ?* (lit. *for what*)

это для менѧ слишкомъ дрого

*that is too dear for me*

это для неї не довольно хороши

*that is not good enough for her*

до = *up to, until, before*

отъ Петрограда до Москвы

*from Petrograd to Moscow*

отъ Лондона до Парижа

*from London to Paris*

онъ до сихъ поръ тамъ

*he is there till now (lit. until those times)*

она до сихъ поръ здѣсь

*she is still here*

до єтого онъ былъ тамъ

*until now (or before this) he was there*

это бывало до менѧ

*this was before my time*

до свиданія = *till we meet again*

изъ = *from out of*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : изо)

это письмо изъ Россіи

*this letter is from Russia*

эта телеграмма изъ Лондона

*this telegram is from London*

эта открытка изъ Оксфорда

*this postcard is from Oxford*

эта открытка изъ Кембриджа

*this postcard is from Cambridge*

N.B. оди́нъ изъ нихъ = *one of them* (masc.)

оди́нъ изъ ихъ друзѣй = *one of their friends*

одна изъ ихъ лошаде́й = *one of their horses*

оди́нъ изъ мойхъ знакомыхъ

*one of my acquaintances*

оди́нъ изъ єтихъ людѣй

*one of these people*

## 146 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING GENITIVE

отъ = *away from*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : ото)

это письмо отъ моего друга  
*this letter is from my friend*

отъ кого эта телеграмма ?  
*from whom is this telegram ?*

неизвестно отъ кого эта открытка  
*I don't know (it is not known) from whom this postcard is*

эти письма отъ моихъ друзей  
*these letters are from my friends*

сюда отъ нихъ далекъ  
*it is far from them here (lit. hither)*

сюда отъ Москвы очень далеко  
*it is a long way here from Moscow*

туда отъ насы близко  
*from our house there (lit. thither) is not far*

туда отъ Петрограда совсѣмъ близко  
*it is quite near from Petrograd there*

вотъ письмо отъ него = *here is a letter from him*

вотъ письмо отъ его жены  
*here is a letter from his wife*

вотъ открытка отъ неї  
*here is a postcard from her*

вотъ открытка отъ еї мужа  
*here is a postcard from her husband*

ваше письмо отъ первого февраля  
*your letter of the 1st of February*

бóколо = *about, near, around*

бóколо двухъ рублéй = *about two roubles*

стуль бóколо столá = *the chair is near the table*

пóслѣ = *after* (also = *afterwards*)

пóслѣ завтрака = *after lunch* (= *in the afternoon*)

пóслѣ чáя (or чáю) = *after tea*

пóслѣ обéда = *after dinner*

крóмѣ = *besides, except*

всé крóмѣ менé = *all except me*

крóмѣ тогó = *besides that*

вмéсто = *instead of*

вóзлѣ = *alongside*

дорóга вóзлѣ рéки = *a road alongside the river*

## CHAPTER 44

### THE DATIVE

#### Substantives

The dative singular endings are :

HARD { Masculine } -y  
          { Neuter      }

SOFT { Masculine } -io  
        { Neuter      }

and

Feminine -ї

for both hard and soft nouns, but feminine nouns in -íj have dative singular in -ii.

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masculine	{ магазíну билéту столý
	Neuter	{ мъсту селý обществу
	Feminine	{ бáбъ кóмнатъ избъ
SOFT NOUNS	Masculine	{ автомобíлю слúчаю соловью Васíллю
	Neuter	{ пóлю ружью имéнню
	Feminine	{ недéлъ статьъ áрміи Россíи

The dative singular of the other words mentioned on pp. 90–91 is :

концú	дню
послú	огню
ребёнку	дéвочкé

Feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина have dative singular in -ої : Пáвловой, Арсéньевой, Карсáвиной (cf. pp. 54, 104).

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have dative singular in -и, e.g. :

лóшади	цéркви
вéщи	мáтери
	дóчери

Neuter nouns in -я have dative singular in -ени, e.g. :

врéмени

The dative plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives without exception ends in -мъ.

The dative plural endings of the substantives are :

HARD { Masculine  
        Neuter  
        Feminine } -амъ

SOFT { Masculine  
        Neuter  
        Feminine } -ямъ

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masculine	{ магазíнамъ билéтамъ столáмъ}
	Neuter	{ мъстáмъ сёlamъ обществамъ}
	Feminine	{ бáбамъ комнатамъ избáмъ}

SOFT NOUNS	Masculine	{ автомобíльямъ слúчаямъ соловьямъ
	Neuter	{ полáмъ ружъя́мъ имъніямъ
	Feminine	{ недѣлямъ статья́мъ áрміямъ

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ъ have dative plural in -ямъ.

лошадýамъ	lashadyám
дочерýамъ	dacheryám
дѣтiamъ	dyéityam
людiamъ	lyúdyam

But those ending in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ have -амъ, e.g.:

вещáмъ	v(y)eshchám
--------	-------------

also

церквáмъ	ts(y)erkvám
----------	-------------

Neuter nouns in -я have dative plural in -енáмъ, e.g. :

временáмъ	vr(y)emenám
-----------	-------------

The dative plural of all the words of which the genitive plural has been specially given is perfectly normal, viz. -амъ or -ямъ, according to whether the noun is hard or soft ; it can always be recognized by the ending -мъ.

The following may be specially mentioned :

сту́льямъ	сбѣдямъ	небесамъ
братьямъ	дерѣвьямъ	плечамъ
сыновьямъ	ушамъ	колѣнямъ
друзьямъ	чудесамъ	

## CHAPTER 45

### THE DATIVE

#### Pronouns

##### DATIVE

мнѣ	mnyé	= to me
тебѣ	tyebyé	= to thee
ему́ <sup>1</sup>	yemú	= to him, to it
ей <sup>1</sup>	yei	= to her
намъ	nam	= to us
вамъ	vam	= to you
имъ <sup>1</sup>	yim	= to them
себѣ <sup>2</sup>	s(y)ebyé	= to oneself

##### SING.

##### PLUR.

M. N.	моему́	mayemú	моймъ	mayím
F.	моей	mayéi		
M. N.	твоему́	tvayemú	твоймъ	tvayím
F.	твоей	tvayéi		

<sup>1</sup> When governed by a preposition these words assume initial н, e.g. къ нему́, къней, кънимъ.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note on p. 96.

	SING.		PLUR.
M. N.	náшему	náshemu }	нашimъ
F.	нашей	náshei }	náshym
M. N.	váшему	váshemu }	вáшимъ
F.	вáшей	váshei }	váshym
M. N.	своему	svayemú }	своймъ
F.	своей	svayéi }	svayím
	M. F.      кому	каму	
	N.            чему	chemu	
M. N.	чьему	chyemú }	чымъ
F.	чьеи	chyéi }	chyíkh
M. N.	одному	adnamú	одниmъ
F.	одноi	adnói	однěmъ
M. N.	самому	samamú }	самимъ
F.	самоi	samói }	samím
M. N.	этому	é <sup>a</sup> tamu }	этимъ
F.	этой	é <sup>a</sup> toi <sup>1</sup>	é <sup>i</sup> tyim
M. N.	тому	tamu }	тѣмъ
F.	той	toi }	tyé <sup>a</sup> m
M. N.	всему	fs(y)emú }	всѣмъ
F.	всей	fsyéi }	fsyé <sup>a</sup> m

<sup>1</sup> This -oi in rapid speech sounds like the letter ы.

## CHAPTER 46

## THE DATIVE

## Adjectives

SING.

PLUR.

M. N.	краси́вому	krasívamu	}	краси́вымъ	krasívym
F.	краси́вой	krasívoi <sup>1</sup>			

M. N.	сíнему	sínyemu	}	сíнимъ	sínyim
F.	сíней	sínyei			

M. N.	молодóму	maladómu	}	молодýмъ	maladým
F.	молодóй	maladói			

M. N.	высóкому	vysókamu	}	высóкимъ	vysókim
F.	высóкой	vysókoi <sup>1</sup>			

M. N.	дорогóму	daragómu	}	дорогýмъ	daragím
F.	дорогóй	daragói			

M. N.	хорóшему	(k)haróshemu	}	хорóшимъ	(k)haróshym
F.	хорóшей	(k)haróshei			

M. N.	большóму	bal'shómu	}	большýмъ	bal'shým
F.	большóй	bal'shói			

<sup>1</sup> This -oi in rapid speech sounds like the letter ы.

## CHAPTER 47

## PHRASES CONTAINING WORDS IN THE DATIVE

это мнѣ ? = *is this for me ?*

это тебѣ = *this is for thee*

это намъ ? = *is this for us ?*

это вамъ = *this is for you*

большбѣ тебѣ спасібо = *many thanks to thee*

большбѣ вамъ спасібо = *many thanks to you*

(contracted from спасі Богъ = *God save*)

благодаря этому } = *thanks to this*

спасібо этому }

слава Божи ! = (*glory to God*) *thank goodness !*

(often = *very well indeed*)

вотъ тебѣ } = *here you are, take this*

вотъ вамъ }

вотъ вамъ книга = *here is the book for you*

вотъ вамъ днги = *here is the money for you*

вотъ вамъ перо = *here is a pen for you*

вотъ вамъ мѣсто = *here is a place for you*

вотъ вамъ письмо = *here is a letter for you*

вотъ вамъ открытка = *here is a postcard for you*

мнѣ хблодно = *I am cold*

ему теплб = *he is warm*

мнѣ совсѣмъ теплб = *I am quite warm*

мнѣ даже слїшкомъ жарко = *I am even too hot*

вамъ хблодно ? = *are you cold ?*

вамъ теплб ? = *are you warm ?*

спасибо, мнѣ совсѣмъ хорошо = *thanks, I am quite all right*  
 мнѣ плохо = *I feel bad*  
 ему сегодня хуже = *he is worse to-day*

намъ здѣсь даже лучше чѣмъ тамъ  
*we are even better (off) here than there*

больному сегодня гораздо лучше  
*the patient (masc.) is much better to-day*

больной сегодня гораздо хуже  
*the patient (fem.) is much worse to-day*

моему отцу вчера было лучше  
*my father was better yesterday*

мнѣ завтра будешь лучше  
*I shall be better to-morrow*

ему ужъ очень плохо  
*he is really very bad*

ей ужъ совсѣмъ хорошо  
*she is quite all right now*

мнѣ здѣсь хорошо = *I am all right here*

мнѣ здѣсь лучше = *I am better here*

мнѣ здѣсь нехорошо = *I don't like it here*

(мнѣ) можно ? = *may I ?*

(вамъ) нельзя = *you may not*

можно мнѣ туда ? = *may I (go) there (lit. thither) ?*

вамъ туда нельзя = *you may not (go) there*

а сюда можно = *but you may here*

мнѣ это невозможно = *that is impossible for me*

мнѣ это непріятно = *that is disagreeable to me*

вамъ ётно пріятно ? = *is that agreeable to you ?*

угодно ли вамъ ? = *do you wish ?* (lit. *is it pleasing to you*)

что вамъ угодно ? = *what do you want ?*

какъ вамъ угодно = *as you like*

вамъ удобно такъ ? = *are you comfortable like that ?*

мнѣ совсѣмъ удобно = *I am quite comfortable*

мнѣ неудобно = *I am uncomfortable, it is awkward for me*

мнѣ нелбко = *I don't like to*

это мнѣ довольно = *that is enough for me*

это мнѣ мало = *that is not enough for me* (lit. *little*)

это мнѣ будетъ мнго = *that will be (too) much for me*

мнѣ болно = *it hurts me*

гдѣ вамъ болно ? = *where does it hurt you ?*

это вамъ тяжело = *that is (too) heavy for you*

мнѣ это легкo = *it is light (or easy) for me*

мнѣ это трудно = *it is difficult for me*

это будетъ мнѣ выгодно = *that will be advantageous for me*

это будетъ вамъ полезно = *that will be good for you*

это будетъ вамъ вредно = *that will be bad for you* (sc. *for your health*)

вамъ будетъ плохо = *you will fare badly*

мнѣ скучно = *I feel depressed (bored)*

мнѣ грустно = *I feel sad*

мнѣ топшно = *I feel sick*

мнѣ дурно = *I feel faint*

что вамъ надо (*or* нужно) ?

*what do you want ?* (lit. *is necessary*)

мнѣ надо черниль, почтовой бумаги, перо, карандашъ

*I want some ink, some writing (lit. postal) paper, a pen, and a pencil*

мнѣ́ ну́жно конвѣртъ (*or обложка*) и откры́тка и листъ почтобо́й бумаги

*I want an envelope, a postcard, and a sheet of writing paper*

мнѣ́ на́до ма́рочкъ, пожа́луйста

*I want some stamps, please*

мнѣ́ на́до горя́чей воды́

*I want some hot water*

мнѣ́ на́до мы́ла и полоте́нце

*I want some soap and a towel*

мнѣ́ на́до хоро́шая, чи́стая и не слíшкомъ дорого́я кóмната

*I want a nice, clean, and not too expensive room*

мнѣ́ на́до же́лѣзная кровáть и чи́стая постéль

*I want an iron bedstead and clean bedding*

мнѣ́ на́до подúшка, чи́стая на́волочка, второ́е одъя́ло, и чи́стые прости́ни

*I want a pillow, a clean pillow-case, a second blanket (or quilt), and clean sheets*

мнѣ́ на́до но́сильщикъ = *I want a porter*

мнѣ́ на́до извóщикъ = *I want a cab*

сколько вамъ ну́жно? = *how much do you want?* (*or how many*)

спаси́бо, мнѣ́ (бо́льше) ничегó не ну́жно

*thank you, I don't want anything (more)*

Obs. ну́жный is often treated as the predicate and must then agree with the noun, e.g. :

мнѣ́ ну́женъ э́тотъ журна́ль = *I require this magazine*

мнѣ́ нужна́ э́та кни́га = *I require this book*

вамъ нужны́ ёти дёныги ? = *do you require this money ?*

пожалуйста, дайтe мнъ = *please, give me*

передаите мнъ = *hand me, pass me*

скажите мнъ = *tell me*

покажите мнъ = *show me*

принесите мнъ = *bring me*

позвольте мнъ = *permit me*

простите мнъ = *forgive me*

помогите мнъ = *help me*

дайте мнъ билетъ = *give me a ticket*

передаите мнъ соль = *hand me the salt*

скажите мнъ, гдѣ гостиница

*tell me where is the hotel*

покажите мнъ кóмнату

*show me a (or the) room*

это мнъ (не) нráвится

*this (dis-)pleases me, I (don't) like this*

принесите мнъ горячей воды, кусокъ мыла и чистое полотенце

*bring me some hot water, a piece of soap, and a clean towel*

### Addressing Letters

Его Высокоблагородию (abbreviated E.B.B.)

Ивáну Николáевичу Андрéеву

*to his highlywellborn-ness (= Esq.)*

*Ivan Nikolayevich Andreyev*

Ей Высокоблагородию

Аннъ Ивáновнъ Андрéевой

*to her . . . Anna Ivanovna Andreyeva (= Mrs.)*

Его Превосходительству  
Сергью Михайловичу Соломирскому  
*to his Excellency*  
*Sergius Mikhailovich Solomirski*

Его Сиятельству Князю  
Павлу Петровичу Долгорукому  
*to his Serenity Prince*  
*Paul Petrovich Dolgoruki*

## CHAPTER 48

### VOCABULARY

#### Clothes

шуба <i>f.</i>	shúba	<i>fur coat</i>
мехъ (-á) <i>m. (pl.)</i>	myéakh	<i>fur(s)</i>
пальто <i>n. (indecl.)</i>	pal'tó	<i>overcoat</i>
фракъ <i>m.</i>	frak	<i>evening-dress coat</i>
сюртукъ <i>m.</i>	syurtúk	<i>frock-coat</i>
жилетъ <i>m.</i>	zhylyéat	<i>waistcoat</i>
пиджакъ <i>m.</i>	pidzhák	<i>short day-coat</i>
брюки <i>m. pl.</i>	bryúki	<i>breeches</i>
штаны <i>m. pl.</i>	shtaný	<i>trousers</i>
панталоны <i>m. pl.</i>	pantalóny	
рубашка <i>f.</i>	rubáshka	<i>shirt</i>
фуфайка <i>f.</i>	fufáika	<i>undervest</i>
подштанники <i>m. pl.</i>	patshtányiki	<i>drawers</i>
(носокъ) носки <i>m. pl.</i>	naskí	<i>socks</i>
(чулокъ) чулки <i>m. pl.</i>	chulkí	<i>stockings</i>
(сапогъ) сапоги <i>m. pl.</i>	sapagí	<i>top-boots</i>
(башмакъ) башмаки <i>m. pl.</i>	bashmakí	<i>boots, shoes</i>
(түфля) түфли <i>f. pl.</i>	túflyi	<i>slippers, light shoes</i>
(калoша) калoши <i>f. pl.</i>	kalóshy	<i>galoshes</i>
халатъ <i>m.</i>	(k)halát	<i>dressing-gown</i>
костюмъ <i>m.</i>	kastyúm	<i>suit, costume</i>

плáтье <i>n.</i>	plátye	suit, dress
юбка <i>f.</i>	yúpká	skirt
кушáкъ <i>m.</i>	kushák	sash
пóясъ <i>m.</i>	póyas	belt
прáжка <i>f.</i>	pryáshka	buckle
блúза <i>f.</i>	blúza	blouse
кóфточка <i>f.</i>	kóftachka	lady's jacket
(перчáтка) перчáтки <i>f. pl.</i>	perchátki	gloves
воротníкъ <i>m.</i>	varatnýk	collar
зáпонка <i>f.</i>	zápanka	stud, link
пúговица <i>f.</i>	púgovitsa	button
гáлстукъ <i>m.</i>	gálstuk	tie
подтáжки <i>f. pl.</i>	patyáshki	braces
(рукáвъ) рукавá <i>m. pl.</i>	rukavá	sleeves
подклáдка <i>f.</i>	patklátka	lining
шáпка <i>f.</i>	shápka	man's hat, cap
мéховáя ш. <i>f.</i>	m(y)ekhaváya sh.	fur cap
шлáпа <i>f.</i>	shlyápa	lady's hat
(носовой) платóкъ <i>m.</i>	platók	(hand)kerchief
непромокáемое <i>n. (adj.)</i>	nyepramakáyemoye <sup>1</sup>	waterproof
зónтикъ <i>m.</i>	zóntyik	umbrella
пáлка <i>f.</i>	pálka	stick
трóсточка <i>f.</i>	tróstachka	cane
бéльё <i>n.</i>	bilyó	linen (garments)
плáтье <i>n.</i>	plátye	{ clothes
одéжда <i>f.</i>	adyézhda	
óbувь <i>f.</i>	óbuf'	footwear
стíрка <i>f.</i>	styírka	the wash
крахмáль <i>m.</i>	krakhmál	starch
нóжницы <i>f. pl.</i>	nózhnyitsy	scissors
булáвка <i>f.</i>	buláfka	pin
а́нглíйская б. <i>f.</i>	ánglyiskaya b.	safety pin
шпíлька <i>f.</i>	shpíl'ka	hair-pin
йголка <i>f.</i>	ígalka	needle
нítка <i>f.</i>	nyítka	thread
сукнó <i>n.</i>	suknó	cloth
полотнó <i>n.</i>	palatnó	linen

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 1 on p. 70.

шерсть <i>f.</i>	shéirst'	<i>wool</i>
щётка <i>f.</i>	shchótka	<i>brush</i>
гребёнка <i>f.</i>	grebyónka	<i>comb</i>
бритьва <i>f.</i>	brítva	<i>razor</i>
саквойжь <i>m.</i>	sakvayásh	<i>hand-lag</i>
портфель <i>m.</i>	partfél'	<i>pocket-book</i>
кошелёкъ <i>m.</i>	kashelyók	<i>purse</i>
чемоданъ <i>m.</i>	chemadán	<i>trunk</i>
(ремéнь) ремнý <i>m. pl.</i>	remnyí	<i>(strap) holdall</i>
пледъ <i>m.</i>	plyéat	<i>rug</i>
шаль <i>f.</i>	sha'il'	<i>shawl</i>
карманъ <i>m.</i>	karmán	<i>pocket</i>
аршинъ <i>m.</i>	arshín	<i>yard</i>
кольцо <i>n.</i>	kal'tsó	<i>ring</i>
очки <i>m. pl.</i>	achkí	<i>spectacles</i>

## CHAPTER 49

## AGE

скóлько вамъ лéть ? = *how old are you ?* (lit. *how many to you of years ?*)

мнó двáдцать лéть = *I am twenty*

емú двáдцать оди́нъ годъ = *he is twenty-one*

ей тридцать два гóда = *she is thirty-two*

емú сброкъ три гóда = *he is forty-three*

ей пятьдесáть четырё гóда = *she is fifty-four*

емú шестьдесáть пять лéть = *he is sixty-five*

ей лéть сéмьдесáть = *she is about seventy*

этому ребёнку тóлько шесть лéть = *this child is only six*

этой дéвочкé почтí семь лéть = *this little girl is nearly seven*

емú бóльше восьмí (gen. of comparison) лéть = *he is more than eight*

емú нéть ешё восьмí лéть = *he is not yet eight*

емú ужé вóсемь лéть = *he is already eight*

два го́да тому́ наза́дъ = *two years ago* (lit. *to that back*)  
 мнóго лéть тому́ наза́дъ = *many years ago*  
 нéсколько дней тому́ наза́дъ = *several days ago*

## CHAPTER 50

### PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE DATIVE

къ = *to*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : ко)

приходíте къ намъ = *come and see us*  
*prikhadyítye k nam* (lit. *come to us*)

приходíте ко мнé = *come and see me*  
*ka mnyé*

къ моему сожалéнию ихъ нé-было дóма  
*to my regret they were not at home*

къ моему удивлénию онъ былъ ужé тамъ  
*to my astonishment he was already there*

къ счáстíю они́ всé здорóвы  
*fortunately, they are all well* (lit. *to good fortune*)

къ несчáстíю, ихъ тутъ нéть тепéрь  
*unfortunately they are not here now*

къ начáлу мáрта я бúду опáть дóма  
*by the beginning of March I shall again be at home*

къ нóвому гóду я бúду опáть здéсь  
*by the New Year I shall be here again*

къ концú этого мéсяца  
*by (or towards) the end of this month*

по = *according to, along, on, at (the rate of)*  
 (cf. p. 199)

по мнѣ́ }  
 по мбѣ́му } = *in my (opinion), I consider*  
 по вѣ́шему = *in your (opinion)*  
 по егб мнѣ́нію = *in his opinion*  
 по мбѣ́му нельзѧ = *I don't think it is possible*  
 по вѣ́шему мбѣ́жно ? = *do you think it is possible ?*  
 какъ по вѣ́шему ? = *what do you think about it ?* (lit.  
*how in your*)

по є́тому = *for this reason*  
 почему́ ? = *why ? for what reason ?*  
 потому́, что = *because (lit. for that what)*

по москѣ́вскому врѣ́мени  
*by Moscow time*

двѣ́ мѣ́тки по однѣ́й копѣ́йкѣ́  
*two stamps at one kopek each*  
 дѣ́сять мѣ́рокъ по семи́ копѣ́екъ  
*ten stamps at seven kopeks each*  
 эти́ яблоки по пятї́ копѣ́екъ (штѣ́ка)  
*these apples are at five kopeks each (piece)*

but for prices *at two, three, and four*, cf. pp. 170-71.

по жѣ́лѣ́зной дорогѣ́ = *by rail*  
 по Воскресѣ́ньямъ = *on Sundays*  
 по понедѣ́льникамъ = *on Mondays*  
 по втѣ́рникамъ = *on Tuesdays*  
 по средамъ = *on Wednesdays*  
 по четвергамъ = *on Thursdays*  
 по пятницамъ = *on Fridays*  
 по субботамъ = *on Saturdays*

по зако́ну = *according to the law*

по улице́ = *along the street*

по набережной́ = *along the quay*

## CHAPTER 51

### THE ACCUSATIVE

The accusative singular and plural of all masculine nouns, pronouns, and adjectives, and the accusative plural of all feminine nouns, pronouns and adjectives is the same as the nominative (singular and plural respectively) in the case of **inanimate**, and the same as the genitive (singular and plural respectively) in the case of **animate**, or **once animate** things. The accusative of all neuter words is always the same as the nominative, singular and plural, with one exception.

#### Feminine Substantives, singular

Feminine nouns have the following endings in the accusative singular :

Hard	-y
Soft	-io

HARD NOUNS	<table> <tr> <td>бáбу</td><td>bábu</td></tr> <tr> <td>кóмнату</td><td>kómnatu</td></tr> <tr> <td>избú</td><td>izbú</td></tr> </table>	бáбу	bábu	кóмнату	kómnatu	избú	izbú
бáбу	bábu						
кóмнату	kómnatu						
избú	izbú						

SOFT NOUNS	<table> <tr> <td>недéлю</td><td>nyedyélyu</td></tr> <tr> <td>статью</td><td>statyú</td></tr> <tr> <td>áрмию</td><td>ármiyu</td></tr> <tr> <td>Россию</td><td>Rassíyu</td></tr> </table>	недéлю	nyedyélyu	статью	statyú	áрмию	ármiyu	Россию	Rassíyu
недéлю	nyedyélyu								
статью	statyú								
áрмию	ármiyu								
Россию	Rassíyu								

The accusative singular of all feminine nouns in ь- is the same as the nominative singular, viz. :

## NOM. AND ACC.

лóшадь	цéрковь
вéшь	мать
	дочь

As regards the accusative plural ending these nouns follow the general rule given on p. 164.

**Feminine Pronouns and Adjectives, singular**

The accusative singular endings of feminine pronouns and adjectives are :

её	yeuó	<i>her</i>
мо́ю	mayú	<i>my</i>
тво́ю	tvayú	<i>thy</i>
на́шу	náshu	<i>our</i>
вáшу	váshu	<i>your</i>
сво́ю	svayú	<i>own</i>
чью	chyú	<i>whose</i>
однú	adnú	<i>one</i>
самоё	samayó	<i>herself</i>
эту	é <sup>a</sup> tu	<i>this or that</i>
ту	tu	<i>that yonder</i>
всю	fsyú	<i>all, the whole</i>
красíвую	krasívuyu	<i>beautiful</i>
сíнию	sínyuyu	<i>dark blue</i>
молодúю	maladúyu	<i>young</i>
высóкую	vysókuyu	<i>tall</i>
дорогúю	daragúyu	<i>dear</i>
хорóшую	(k)haróshuyu	<i>nice</i>
большúю	bal'shúyu	<i>big</i>

The only exceptions to the above rules are that the accusative of

кто is always когó

онó is always егó

i.e. is always the same as the genitive, while the accusative of

что is always что

## CHAPTER 52

### PHRASES IN WHICH THE ACCUSATIVE IS USED

благодарю васъ = *I thank you*

благодарю васъ бчень = *thank you very much*

мнѣ её жаль = *I am sorry for her* (lit. *to me is pity*)

мнѣ егó жаль = *I am sorry for him*

мнѣ бýло бчень жаль ихъ

*I was very sorry for them*

дáйте мнѣ ёту книгу = *give me this book*

дáйте ему ёти дёньги = *give him this money*

покажите мнѣ вашъ паспортъ

*show me your passport*

покажите мнѣ вáши билéты

*show me your tickets*

принесíте мнѣ мой вéщи

*bring me my things*

сей-чáсь = *immediately*

сíо минúту = *this minute*

The accusative is used to express time :

каждый разъ = *every time*

каждый день = *every day*

каждый вечеръ = *every evening*

каждый годъ = *every year*

каждое утро = *every morning*

каждую неделю = *every week*

каждую ночь = *every night*

эту неделю = *this week*

эту весну = *this spring*

это лето = *this summer*

эту осень = *this autumn*

эту зиму = *this winter*

but for *this morning*, *in the winter*, &c., cf. pp. 180–1.

With the names of the days of the week (cf. pp. 84–85, 168) and with those of the seasons **каждый** is also used in the accusative.<sup>1</sup>

## CHAPTER 53

### PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE ACCUSATIVE

въ = *into, to*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : во)

въ Россію = *to Russia*

въ Англію = *to England*

въ Германію = *to Germany*

<sup>1</sup> Other words similarly so used are

прóшлый = *last* (sc. *the previous*)

будущíй = *the next*

слѣдующíй = *the following*

во Францію = *to France*

въ Сибірь = *to Siberia*

въ Кримъ = *to the Crimea*

въ Італію = *to Italy*

въ Москву = *to Moscow*

въ Одесу = *to Odessa*

въ школу = *to school*

въ театръ = *to the theatre*

въ садъ = *into the garden*

въ домъ = *into the house* <sup>1</sup>

въ градъ = *into the town*

въ ресторонъ = *to the restaurant*

въ гостиницу = *to the hotel*

билéть въ Киевъ = *a ticket to Kiev*

билéТЬ въ Москву = *a ticket to Moscow*

въ Воскресéнье бýдетъ представлénіе

*on Sunday there will be a performance*

въ понедѣльникъ бýдетъ концéртъ

*on Monday there will be a concert*

во втбрникъ не бýдетъ представлénія

*on Tuesday there will be no performance*

въ срéду не бýдетъ концéрта

*on Wednesday there will be no concert*

въ четвéргъ есть парохбдъ

*on Thursday there is a steamer*

въ пáтницу нéть парохбда

*on Friday there is no steamer*

въ суббóту бýдетъ парохбдъ

*on Saturday there will be a steamer*

<sup>1</sup> But домóй = *home, to one's home, homewards.*

пóѣздъ въ двá часá

*the train is at 2 o'clock*

пóѣздъ въ пять часóвъ

*the train is at 5 o'clock*

пóѣздъ въ половíну пéрваго

*the train is at 12.30*

зáвтракъ въ часъ

*lunch is at one o'clock*

обѣдъ въ сéмь часóвъ

*dinner is at 7*

въ половíну одиnnадцатаго я бúду здѣсь

*at 10.30 I shall be here*

начáло представлéнія въ половíну восьмого

*the beginning of the performance is at 7.30*

ужинъ бúдетъ въ дéвять часовъ

*supper will be at 9 o'clock*

я здѣсь въ пéрвый разъ

*I am here for the first time*

это бúдетъ въ другóй разъ

*that will be for another time*

въ éто врéмя я быль ббленъ

*at that time I was ill*

гдѣ вы были въ éто врéмя ?

*where were you at that time ?*

онъ всегда вó-время

*he is always in (good) time*

во врéмя урóка

*during the (time of the) lesson*

## 170 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING ACCUSATIVE

на = *on to*

положите книгу на столъ

*lay the book on (to) the table*

поставьте стаканъ на поднось

*put the tumbler on (to) the tray*

положите чемоданъ на-поль

*put the trunk on (to) the floor*

это бу́детъ на мой счёть

*that will be on my account*

я бочень радъ на счёть этого

*I am very glad about this (on account of this)*

мнѣ бочень жаль на счёть этого дѣла

*I am very sorry about this business*

на Кавказъ = *to the Caucasus*

на вокзалъ ! = *to the station ! (sc. terminus, big station)*

на станцю ! = *to the station ! (sc. small station)*

на пристань ! = *to the landing-stage !*

за = *for*

благодарю васъ за ваше письмо

*thank you for your letter*

благодарю васъ за это

*thank you for this*

вотъ счёть за вашу комнату

*here is the bill for your room*

вотъ дёныги за билéты

*here is the money for the tickets*

по = *at* (cf. pp. 163, 199)

пять марокъ (nom. sing. марка) по-две копейки

*five stamps at 2 kopeks each*

четыре марки по-три копейки

*four stamps at 3 kopeks each*

три марки по четырех копейки

*three stamps at 4 kopeks each*

пять открыток по четырех копейки

*five postcards at 4 kopeks each*

две открытки по-три копейки

*two postcards at 3 kopeks each*

черезъ (or чрезъ, or чéрезо) = *through, via, across*

черезъ Москву = *through, or via Moscow*

черезъ пóле = *across the field*

черезъ мóре = *across the sea*

черезъ весь гóродъ = *through the whole town*

черезъ когó ? = *by whose agency ? through whom ?*

## CHAPTER 54

### THE INSTRUMENTAL

#### Substantives

The instrumental singular endings are :

HARD	Masculine	-омъ
	Neuter	
	Feminine	

SOFT	Masculine	-емъ
	Neuter	
	Feminine	

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masc.	магази́номъ биле́томъ столомъ	magazínam bilyé <sup>a</sup> tam stalóm
	Neut.	мѣстомъ селомъ обществомъ	myé <sup>a</sup> stam s(y)elóm ópshchestvam
	Fem.	бáбой or бáбою кóмнатой or кóмнатою избóй or избóю	báboi <sup>1</sup> , -oyu kómnatoi <sup>1</sup> , -oyu izbói, -óyu
SOFT NOUNS	Masc.	автомоби́лемъ слу́чаемъ соловьёмъ Васи́лиемъ	aftamabílyem slúchayem salavyóm vasíliyem
	Neut.	пóлемъ ружьёмъ имънiemъ	pólyem ruzhyóm imyé <sup>i</sup> niyem
	Fem.	недѣлeй or недѣлею статeй or статeю áрмией or áрмиею Россeй or Россeю	nyedyé <sup>i</sup> lyei, -yeuyu statyói, -yóyu ármiei, -yeuyu Rassíyei, -yeuyu

Masculine nouns ending in **-цъ** (also neuter nouns in **-цо**, **-це**, **-ще**) have instrumental singular in **-омъ**

<sup>1</sup> The fem. inst. ending **-ой** when unaccented sounds almost like **-ы**.

when the ending is accented and in -емъ when it is not, e.g. :

	NOM. SING.	INST. SING.
Masc.	ко́нёцъ	ко́нцомъ
	отéцъ	отцомъ
	мъсяцъ	мъсяцемъ
	нъмецъ	нъмцемъ
Neut.	лицо ( <i>face, person</i> )	лицомъ
	полотёнце ( <i>towel</i> )	полотёнцемъ

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ца have instrumental singular in -ей, e.g. :

	NOM. SING.	INST. SING.
	у́лица ( <i>street</i> )	у́лицей (or у́лицею)

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ, and feminine nouns with nominative singular in -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща have instrumental singular in -омъ, -ой when the ending is accented, and in -емъ, -ей when it is not (nevertheless the masculine accented ending is still often written -емъ, of course pronounced -омъ, because ё after ж, ч, ш, щ becomes о), e.g. :

	NOM. SING.	INST. SING.
	ключъ	{ ключомъ ключёмъ}
	ножъ	{ ножомъ ножёмъ}
	свѣчâ	{ свѣчой свѣчю}

NOM. SING.		INST. SING.
экипáжъ		экипáжемъ ekipázhem
Ивáновичъ or Ивáнычъ	} Iványch <sup>1</sup> =son of Ivan	Ивáновичемъ or Ивáнычемъ } Iványchem
калóша		{ калóшай kalóshei калóшею kalósheyu

Masculine surnames in -овъ, -евъ and -инъ have the instrumental singular in -ымъ, like adjectives: Ту́ргéневымъ, Лéрмонтовымъ, Пúшкинымъ; feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина have -ой.

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ъ have instrumental singular in -ью (sometimes spelt -ию), e.g. :	
лóшадью lóshadyu	цéрковью ts(y)éirkavyu
вéщью vyéishchyu	мáтерью mátyeryu
	дóчерью dócheryu

The masculine noun путь = *way, means*, which is otherwise declined exactly like лóшадь, has instrumental singular :

путёмъ (= *by means of*) putyóm

Neuter nouns in -я have instrumental singular in -енемъ, e.g. :

врéменемъ	vr(y)éimenyem
íменемъ (= <i>by name</i> )	ímenyem

The instrumental plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives without exception ends in -ми.

<sup>1</sup> Patronymics are in talking always ruthlessly thus abbreviated.

The instrumental plural endings are :

HARD { Masculine  
          Neuter      } -ами  
          Feminine

SOFT { Masculine  
          Neuter      } -ями  
          Feminine

Examples :

HARD NOUNS { Masculine { магазíнами  
                          билéтами  
                          столáми  
          Neuter      { мъстáми  
                          сёлами  
                          обществами  
          Feminine { бáбами  
                          кóмнатами  
                          избáми

SOFT NOUNS { Masculine { автомобíльями  
                          слúчаями  
                          соловьáми  
          Neuter      { полýми  
                          ружъáми  
                          имéніями  
          Feminine { недéльями  
                          статьáми  
                          áрмíями

The instrumental plural of all the words of which the genitive plural has been specially given is perfectly normal, viz. -ами or -ями, according to whether the noun is hard or soft ; it can always be recognized by the ending -ми.

The following may be specially mentioned :

стульями	деревьями
братьями	ушами
сыновьями	чудесами
друзьями	плечами
соседями	колянами

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have instrumental plural in -ями, though some can also have -ьми, e.g. :

лошадьми	lashad'mí
or лошадыми	lashadyámi
дочерьми	dacher'mí
or дочерями	dacheryámi
люди } дѣти }	have only { людьми дѣтьми

lyud'mí  
dyet'mí

Those ending in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ have -ами, e.g. :

вещами	v(y)eshchámi
also	
церквами	ts(y)erkvámi

Neuter nouns in -я have instrumental plural in -енами, e.g. :

временами	vr(y)emenámi
-----------	--------------

## CHAPTER 55

## THE INSTRUMENTAL

## Pronouns

	мной ( <i>or</i> мнóю)	mnoi (mnóyu)
	тобо́й ( <i>or</i> тобо́ю)	tabói (tabóyu)
M. N.	имъ <sup>1</sup>	yim
F.	ей ( <i>or</i> éю) <sup>1</sup>	yei (yéyu)
	нáми	námi
	вáми	vámi
	йми <sup>1</sup>	yími
	собо́й ( <i>or</i> собо́ю)	sabói (sabóyu)

## SINGULAR

## PLURAL

M. N.	мо́ймъ	mayím	} мо́йми	mayími
F.	мо́е́й ( <i>or</i> мо́ю́)	mayéi		
M. N.	тво́ймъ	tvayím	} тво́йми	tvayími
F.	тво́е́й ( <i>or</i> тво́ю́)	tvayéi		
M. N.	на́шимъ	náshym	} на́шими	náshymi
F.	на́шeй ( <i>or</i> на́шею́)	náshei		
M. N.	вáшимъ	váshym	} вáшими	vashými
F.	вáшeй ( <i>or</i> вáшею́)	váshei		
M. N.	своймъ	svayím	} свойми	svayími
F.	свойе́й ( <i>or</i> свойю́)	svayéi		
M. F.	кéмъ	kyéam		
N.	чéмъ	ch(y)éam		

<sup>1</sup> When governed by a preposition these words assume initial н, e.g. съ нимъ, съней, съними.

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
M. N.	чымъ	chyím	чыйми	chyími
F.	чье́й ( <i>or</i> чье́ю)	chyéi		
M. N.	этимъ	étyím	этими	étyimi
F.	это́й <sup>1</sup> ( <i>or</i> это́ю)	étoi <sup>1</sup>		
M. N.	самýмъ	samím	самýми	samími
F.	само́й ( <i>or</i> само́ю)	samói		
M. N.	однýмъ	adnyím	однýми	adnyími
F.	однóй ( <i>or</i> однóю)	adnói	однéми	adnyéimi
M. N.	тéмъ	tyéam	тéми	tyéimi
F.	той ( <i>or</i> тóю)	toi		
M. N.	всéмъ	fsyéam	всéми	fsyéimi
F.	всей ( <i>or</i> всéю)	fsyéi		

## CHAPTER 56

## THE INSTRUMENTAL

## Adjectives

	SINGULAR		PLURAL
M. N.	красíвымъ	красíвыми	красíвыми
F.	красíвой <sup>1</sup> ( <i>or</i> -oю)		
M. N.	сíнимъ	сíними	сíними
F.	сíней ( <i>or</i> -eю)		
M. N.	молодýмъ	молодýми	молодýми
F.	молодóй ( <i>or</i> -бю)		
M. N.	высóкимъ	высóкими	высóкими
F.	высóкой <sup>1</sup> ( <i>or</i> -oю)		

<sup>1</sup> This -ои in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
M. N.	дорогímъ	дорогíми
F.	дорогóй ( <i>or -óю</i> )	
M. N.	хорóшимъ	хорóшими
F.	хорóшей ( <i>or -ею</i> )	
M. N.	большímъ	большíми
F.	большóй ( <i>or -óю</i> )	

## CHAPTER 57

## USES OF THE INSTRUMENTAL

The instrumental is used as a rule to indicate the agent by whom or the instrument by which anything is done :

кéмъ эта кни́га напíсана ? (past participle passive)  
*by whom was this book written ?*

кéмъ это бы́ло скáзано ?  
*by whom was this said ?*

чéмъ онъ былъ убýть ?  
*by what was he killed ?*

чéмъ это бы́ло сдéлано ?  
*by what was this done ?*

онъ былъ убýть своéй женóй  
*he was killed by his own wife*

это бы́ло сдéлано ножéмъ  
*that was done by a knife*

чéмъ богáты, тéмъ и ráды  
*what we are rich in, that we will gladly give (proverb)*

A very common and, to the foreigner, puzzling use of this case is that known as the 'predicative'; when a condition or position, usually of a temporary, accidental, or hypothetical kind, is indicated in the past or the future, the predicate, if a substantive, is very frequently put in the instrumental, e.g.:

когда́ я былъ мальчикомъ = *when I was a boy*

будь моей женю! = *be my wife!*

я никогда́ не буду́ его́ женю

*I will never be his wife*

причиною его́ болѣзни былá простуда

*the cause of his illness was a chill*

онъ верхомъ = *he is on horseback* (lit. *he is the upper part*, nom. *верхъ*)

The instrumental is used to indicate times and seasons as follows :

мы бы́ли тамъ веснóй

*we were there in the spring*

лѣтомъ мы бу́демъ у себя́ дôма

*in the summer we shall be at our own home*

бсенью онá былá оченъ больна

*in the autumn she was very ill*

зимо́й они́ всегда́ за гранíцей

*in winter they are always abroad*

but N.B. эту веснú, это лѣто, эту осень and эту зи́му in the accusative.

вчера́ ве́черомъ онá былá у насъ

*yesterday evening she came to see us*

сего́дня утромъ я былъ у негó  
*this morning I went to see him*

сего́дня днёмъ не бу́детъ представлénія  
*this afternoon (lit. by day) there will be no performance*

зáвтра вéчеромъ бу́детъ представлénіе ?  
*will there be a performance to-morrow evening ?*

сего́дня вéчеромъ бчень хорóшій концéртъ  
*this evening there is a very good concert*

## CHAPTER 58

### PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE INSTRUMENTAL

за = *behind*

онý ужé за столомъ  
*they are already at table*

за дóмомъ есть садъ  
*behind the house there is a garden*

зачéмъ вы здéсь ?  
*why are you here ? (lit. behind what, after what, for what)*

онá зá-мужемъ  
*she is married (lit. is behind a husband)*

онá давнó ужé зá-мужемъ  
*she has been married a long while already*

за кéмъ онá зá-мужемъ ?  
*to whom is she married ?*

за нимъ = *to him* (и inserted after preposition, cf. p. 177)

## 182 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING INSTRUMENTAL

она́ зá-мужемъ за англичáиномъ

*she is married to an Englishman*

её стáршая сестrá зá-мужемъ за францúзомъ

*her elder sister is married to a Frenchman*

её млáдшая сест्रá зá-мужемъ за рýсскимъ

*her younger sister is married to a Russian*

её дочь зá-мужемъ за америкáнцемъ

*her daughter is married to an American*

они́ тепéрь за гранíцей

*they are now abroad* (lit. *beyond the frontier*)

онъ давнó ужé за гранíцей

*he has been* (lit. *is*) *abroad already long since*

мы здѣсь какъ у Христá за пáзухой

*we are in clover here* (lit. *as in Christ's breast-pocket*—  
a proverb)

подъ = *under*

надъ = *above*

(before most words beginning with two consonants written  
пodo, надо)

надо-мнóй нéбо, подо-мнóй земл

*above me is the sky, under me the earth*

собака подъ столомъ

*the dog is under the table*

подъ столомъ собака

*there is a dog under the table*

## PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING INSTRUMENTAL 183

пéредъ = *in front of, before*

(before most words beginning with two consonants written  
пéредо)

за мной лéсь, пéредо мной мóре

*behind me is the forest, in front of me the sea*

пéредъ дóмомъ ўлица, а за ўлицей рéкá

*before the house is the street, and beyond the street the river*

пéредъ селомъ ручéй, а за ручéемъ пóле

*in front of the village is a stream, and behind the stream a field*

пéредъ ётимъ онá была за гранíцей

*before this she was abroad*

я быль бóленъ пéредъ тýмъ

*I was ill before that*

мéжду = *between*

мéжду А́нгліей и Фра́нцией—море

*between England and France is the sea*

мéжду Швейцаріей и Ита́ліей—А́льпы

*between Switzerland and Italy are the Alps*

мéжду Россíей и Сиби́рью—Урálъ

*between Russia and Siberia are the Ural Mountains*

Финля́ндія мéжду Россíей и Шве́ціей

*Finland is between Russia and Sweden*

война мéжду Россíей и Тýрцией

*the war between Russia and Turkey*

съ = *with*(before most words beginning with two consonants written  
co)

что съ вáми ?

*what is (the matter) with you ?*

ничегó со мной нéть

*there is nothing the matter with me*

со мной дúрно

*I feel bad*

съ кéмъ вы бýли тамъ ?

*with whom were you there ?*

съ моймъ дру́гомъ

*with my friend*

я нé-былъ ни съ кéмъ

*I was not with any one*

чай съ сахаромъ и съ лимóномъ

*tea with sugar and lemon*

кофе съ молокомъ и со слíвками

*coffee with milk and cream*

хлéбъ съ ма́сломъ

*bread and butter*

пирожкí съ мя́сомъ

*little pies with meat (in them)*

у менé съ собóй папирóсъ нéть

*I have no cigarettes on me (lit. with myself)*

у тебá дéньги съ собóй есть ?

*have you any money on you ?*

## CHAPTER 59

## THE LOCATIVE

## General use

The locative case is only used after the five prepositions :

въ (or во)	= <i>in</i>
на	= <i>on</i>
о (or объ or обо)	= <i>about, concerning</i>
при	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{in the presence of} \\ \text{in the time of} \\ \text{in addition to} \\ \text{in spite of} \end{array} \right.$
по	= <i>after</i>

It can never be used except when preceded by one of these prepositions (some of which, it must be remembered, take other cases as well) ; hence it is fairly easily to be recognized ; hence, too, it is sometimes called the prepositional case.

## Substantives

The locative singular endings are :

Masculine	}
Feminine	
Neuter	

for both hard and soft nouns ; but

masculine nouns ending in -ий (-i)

feminine nouns ending in -ия (-iya)

and neuter nouns ending in -ие (-iye)

all have locative singular in -ии (-iyi)

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masculine	{ въ магазинѣ на билѣтѣ на столѣ	vmagazínye nablyétye nastalyé
	Neuter	{ на мѣстѣ въ селѣ въ обществѣ	namyéistyé fs(y)elyé vópshestv(y)e
	Feminine	{ о бабѣ въ комнатѣ въ избѣ	abábye fkómnatyé vizbyé
SOFT NOUNS	Masculine	{ въ автомобилѣ о слукаѣ о соловьѣ о Василії	vaftamabílye aslúchaye asalavyé avasílyi
	Neuter	{ на польѣ въ ружьѣ въ имѣнїи въ Россіи	napólye vruzhyé vimeýnyiyi vrassíyi
	Feminine	{ о недѣлѣ въ статьѣ въ арміи	anyedyéilye fstatyé vármiyi

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension :

	NOM. SING.	LOC. SING.
HARD NOUNS	{ конецъ посоль	на концѣ о послѣ
SOFT NOUNS	{ день огонь	о днѣ въ огнѣ

A large number of masculine nouns have a locative singular in -y (if hard) and in -ю (if soft) when used with the prepositions

въ = *in*

на = *on*

This form of the locative singular always has the accent on the end.

These nouns are mostly of one syllable (at most two) in the nom. sing., e.g. :

NOM. SING.	LOC. SING.
бéрегъ b(y)e'rek <i>shore</i>	на берегу naberegú
бокъ bok <i>side</i>	на боку nabakú
верхъ vyé'rkh <i>top</i>	на верху nav(y)erkhú
возъ vos <i>cart</i>	на возу navazú
годъ got <i>year</i>	въ году vgadú
край krai <i>edge</i>	на краю nakrayú
Крымъ krym <i>Crimea</i>	въ Крыму fkrymú
лугъ luk <i>meadow</i>	на лугу nalugú
лъсъ lyé's <i>forest</i>	въ лъсу vlyesú
мостъ most <i>bridge</i>	на мосту namastú
полъ pol <i>floor</i>	на полу napalú
рядъ ryát <i>row</i>	на ряду naryadú
садъ sat <i>garden</i>	въ саду fsadú
снѣгъ snyé'k <i>snow</i>	въ снѣгу fsnyegú
ўголъ úgal <i>corner</i>	въ углу vuglú
часъ chas <i>hour</i>	въ часу fchasú
шкапъ shkap <i>cupboard</i>	въ шкапу fshkapú
and many others.	

Notice especially

лѣдъ lyót <i>ice</i>	на льду nal'dú
ротъ rot <i>mouth</i>	во рту vartú

But:

книга о Крымѣ  
*a book about the Crimea*

Feminine surnames in *-ова*, *-ева*, *-ина* have loc. sing. in *-ой*, like the adjectives :

о Пáвловой, Арсéньевой, Карсáвиной

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in *-ь* have locative singular in *-и*.

## NOM. SING.

## LOC. SING.

лóшадь	на лóшади <sup>1</sup>	nalóshadyi
вeщь	въ вéщи	vv(y)éshchi
цéрковь	въ цéркви	fts(y)érkvi
мать	при мáтери	primátyeri
дочь	при дóчери	pridócheri

Neuter nouns ending in *-я* have locative singular in *-ени*.

## NOM. SING.

## LOC. SING.

врéмя	о врéмени	avr(y)émenyi
-------	-----------	--------------

The locative plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives (except that of two pronouns) ends in *-хъ*.

The locative plural endings are :

HARD  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Masculine} \\ \text{Neuter} \\ \text{Feminine} \end{array} \right\}$  -ахъ

SOFT  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Masculine} \\ \text{Neuter} \\ \text{Feminine} \end{array} \right\}$  -яхъ

<sup>1</sup> = *on the horse*, not *on horseback*, cf. p. 180.

Examples :

HARD NOUNS	Masculine	{ въ магазýнахъ на билéтахъ на столáхъ
	Neuter	{ въ мѣстáхъ въ селáхъ въ обществахъ
	Feminine	{ о бáбахъ въ кóмнатахъ въ избáхъ
SOFT NOUNS	Masculine	{ въ автомобíляхъ въ слúчаяхъ о соловьýхъ
	Neuter	{ на поляхъ въ ружьýхъ въ имѣніяхъ
	Feminine	{ о недѣляхъ въ статьяхъ въ арміяхъ

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have locative plural in -яхъ:

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
лóшадь	лóшади	на лошадяхъ <sup>1</sup>
дочь	дбчери	о дочеряхъ
[дитя]	дѣти	при дѣтяхъ
[человéкъ]	люди	при людяхъ

<sup>1</sup> This phrase means : *by carriage, driving.*

But those ending in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ have -ахъ, e.g. :

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
вещь	вёщи	въ вещáхъ
also цéрковь	цéркви	въ церквáхъ

Neuter nouns in -я have loc. plur. in -енáхъ, e.g. :

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
врéмя	временá	о временáхъ

## CHAPTER 60

### THE LOCATIVE

#### Pronouns

обо мнé	abamnyé = <i>about me</i>
о тебé	atyebýé = <i>about thee</i>
о нёмъ <sup>1</sup>	anyóm = <i>about him, or it</i>
оней <sup>1</sup>	anyéi = <i>about her</i>
о насъ	anás = <i>about us</i>
о васъ	avás = <i>about you</i>
о нихъ <sup>1</sup>	anyíkh = <i>about them</i>
о себé	as(y)ebýé = <i>about oneself</i>

SINGULAR		PLURAL
Masc. } о моёмъ	amayóm	о мойхъ amayíkh
Neut. }		
Fem.    о моéй	amayéi	 <i>about my</i>
Masc. } о твоёмъ	atvayóm	о твойхъ atvayíkh
Neut. }		
Fem.    о твоéй	atvayéi	 <i>about thy</i>

<sup>1</sup> These three forms of the pronoun never occur without the initial н, being always preceded by a preposition.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
Masc.	о на́шемъ anáshem	о на́шихъ anáshykh <i>about our</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	о на́шей anáshei	
Masc.	о вáшемъ aváshem	о вáшихъ aváshykh <i>about your</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	о вáшей aváshei	
Masc.	о своёмъ asvayóm	о свойхъ asvayíkh <i>about one's own</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	о своéй asvayéi	
Masc.	о комъ akóm = <i>about whom</i>	<i>about whom</i>
Fem.		
Neut.	о чёмъ ach(y)óm = <i>about what</i>	

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
Masc.	въ чьёмъ fchyóm	въ чьихъ fchyíkh <i>in whose</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	въ чьей fchyéi	
Masc.	въ однóмъ vadnóm	въ однíхъ vadnyíkh въ однéхъ vadnyéakh <i>in one, in some</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	въ однóй vadnói	
Masc.	въ самóмъ fsamóm	въ самíхъ fsamíkh <i>in -self, -selves</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	въ самóй fsamói	
Masc.	объ ётомъ abé*tam	объ ётихъ abé*tyikh <i>about this, that, these,</i>
Neut.		
Fem.	объ ётой <sup>1</sup> abé*toi <sup>1</sup>	

<sup>1</sup> This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
Masc.	въ томъ ftom	въ тѣхъ ftyé <sup>a</sup> kh
Neut.		<i>in that yonder, in the</i>
Fem.	въ той ftoi	<i>former</i>
Masc.	во всѣмъ vafsyóm	во всѣхъ vafsyé <sup>a</sup> kh
Neut.		<i>in the whole, in all</i>
Fem.	во всей vafsyéi	

## CHAPTER 61

## THE LOCATIVE

## Adjectives

## HARD

	Singular	Plural
Masc.	о краси́вомъ	
Neut.		о краси́выхъ
Fem.	о краси́вой <sup>1</sup>	

## SOFT

Masc.	въ си́немъ	
Neut.		въ си́нихъ
Fem.	въ си́ней	

## HARD (accent on termination)

Masc.	о молодо́мъ	
Neut.		о молоды́хъ
Fem.	о молодо́й	

<sup>1</sup> This -ои in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

## Stem in к г х

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
Masc.	на высóкомъ	на высóкихъ
Neut.		
Fem.	на высóкой <sup>1</sup>	

Same, with accent on termination

Masc.	о дорожóмъ	о дорожíхъ
Neut.		
Fem.		

## Stem in ж ч ш щ

Masc.	въ хорошóмъ	въ хорошихъ
Neut.		
Fem.		

Same, with accent on termination

Masc.	въ большóмъ	въ большихъ
Neut.		
Fam.		

## CHAPTER 62

EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THE LOCATIVE WITH  
THE PREPOSITIONS

въ (or во)

въ чёмъ дѣло ? = *what is the matter ?* (lit. *in what is the business*)дѣньги бýли у менý<sup>2</sup> въ кошелькѣ  
*the money was in my purse*<sup>1</sup> This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.<sup>2</sup> This is better than saying въ моёмъ кошелькѣ.

## 194 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING LOCATIVE

а кошёлёкъ быль у менé въ кармáнъ  
*and the purse was in my pocket*

а тепéрь егó тамъ нéть  
*and now it isn't there*

пáспортъ быль у менé въ другомъ кармáнъ  
*the passport was in my other pocket*

и егó тóже нéть  
*and that isn't (there) either (lit. also)*

билéты были у менé въ трéтьемъ кармáнъ  
*I had the tickets in a third pocket*

и тепéрь дажe ихъ тамъ нéть  
*and now not even they are there*

въ этомъ пóездѣ очень мнóго нарóду  
*in this train there are a lot of people*

въ теáтрѣ сегодня очень ма́ло нарóду  
*in the theatre there are very few people to-day*

въ вáшей кварти́рѣ всегдá теплó  
*in your flat it is always warm*

моя́ невéста тепéрь въ Лóндонъ  
*my fiancée is now in London*

мой женихъ тепéрь въ Москвѣ  
*my fiancé is now in Moscow*

въ этомъ гóродѣ нéть хоро́шай гостíницы  
*in this town there is no good hotel*

въ этомъ селѣ есть очень краси́вая цéрковь  
*in this village there is a very beautiful church*

въ этомъ ресторáнѣ всегдá мнóго нарóду  
*in this restaurant there are always a lot of people*

PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING LOCATIVE 195

мо́й сестра́ въ саду́ = *my sister is in the garden*

мо́й братъ въ лесу́ = *my brother is in the forest*

въ саду́ мнóго цвéтóвъ

*in the garden there are many flowers*

въ лесу́ мнóго грибóвъ

*in the forest there are many mushrooms*

въ э́томъ году́ мы бы́ли въ Крыму́

*this year we have been in the Crimea*

онъ весь въ пылí = *he is all covered with dust*

она́ вся въ грязí = *she is all covered with mud*

всé мой вéщи въ шкапу́

*all my things are in the cupboard*

въ котóромъ часу́

*at what o'clock ?*

часы́ тамъ въ углу́

*the clock is there in the corner*

что́-то въ э́томъ рóдѣ

*something in this style*

э́тотъ садъ въ рóдѣ на́шего

*this garden is like ours (in the kind of)*

въ и́которомъ рóдѣ

*in a certain way, to some extent*

въ и́которыхъ мéстáхъ есть леса́, а въ дру́гихъ поля́

*in some places there are forests and in others fields*

вы бы́ли когдá-нибудь въ Россíи ?

*have you ever been in Russia ?*

я въ А́нгліи въ пéрвый разъ

*I am in England for the first time*

## 196 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING LOCATIVE

на = *on*

на э́томъ парохóдѣ нéтъ бóльше мéста  
*there is no more room on this steamer*

на э́той у́лицѣ бчень хорóшіе магазíны  
*in this street there are very good shops*

вотъ нашъ домъ на э́той у́лицѣ  
*here is our house in this street*

наши дéти на берегу мóря  
*our children are at the seaside*

вы бы́ли вчера на э́томъ концéртѣ  
*were you at that concert yesterday ?*

на э́томъ по́ездѣ есть вагóнъ-ресторáнь  
*on this train there is a restaurant-car*

на э́той стáнци есть хорóшій буфéтъ  
*at this station there is a good refreshment-room*

вáша кóмната на пéрвомъ, вторóмъ, трéтьемъ или четвёр-  
томъ этажé ?

*is your room on the first, second, third, or fourth floor ?*

на дворѣ = *out of doors* (lit. *on the yard*)

на дворѣ сего́дня сильный морóзъ  
*out of doors to-day there is a strong frost*

они тепéрь на Кавкáзѣ  
*they are now in the Caucasus*

Петрогráдъ на Невѣ = *Petrograd is on the Neva*

Москвá на Москвѣ-рѣкѣ = *Moscow is on the Moscow river*

Варшáва на Вíслѣ = *Warsaw is on the Vistula*

Рýга на Двинѣ = *Riga is on the Dvina*

Кіевъ на Днѣпрѣ = *Kiev is on the Dnieper*

Новгородъ на Волховѣ = *Novgorod is on the Volkhov*

Нижній-Новгородъ на Волгѣ = *Nizhni-Novgorod is on the Volga*

Ростовъ-на-Дону = *Rostov-on-the-Don*

на комъ онъ женатъ ?

*to whom is he married ?*

онъ женатъ на русской

*he is married to a Russian*

онъ былъ женатъ на англичанкѣ

*he was married to an Englishwoman*

собака на полу, а кошка на стулѣ

*the dog is on the floor, and the cat is on the chair*

на полу собака, а на стулѣ кошка

*on the floor there is a dog, and on the chair there is a cat*

на мосту былъ автомобиль, а на автомобилѣ былъ чемоданъ

*on the bridge there was a motor-car and on the motor-car was a trunk*

на этомъ полѣ было высокое дерево, а на деревѣ была большая птица

*in this field was a tall tree, and on the tree there was a big bird*

на небѣ сегодня много облаковъ

*in the sky to-day there are many clouds*

у нихъ на стѣнахъ много картинъ

*there are many pictures on their walls*

газета на столѣ, а журналъ на диванѣ

*the newspaper is on the table, and the magazine is on the sofa*

## 198 PREPOSITIONS REQUIRING LOCATIVE

о = *about*

(объ before words beginning with a vowel, occasionally  
обо before some words beginning with two consonants)

скажите мнѣ объ ётомъ  
*tell me about this*

о чёмъ ёта пьеса ?  
*what is this play about ?*

есть статья въ Новомъ Времени сегодняъ объ Англіи  
*there is an article in the Novoye Vremya to-day about England*

въ Русскомъ Слово вчера была очень хорошая статья  
о Львѣ Николаевичѣ Толстомъ  
*in the Russkoye Slovo yesterday there was a very good article about Leo Nikolayevich Tolstoi*

при = *in the presence of, in the time of*

при Петре Великомъ = *in the time of Peter the Great*  
при Екатеринѣ Великой = *in the time of Catherine the Great*  
это было при мнѣ = *that was in my presence (or, in my time, I was there then)*

при томъ = *in addition to that*

при чёмъ = *in addition to which*

при всёмъ томъ = *in spite of all that*

при комъ ? = *in whose presence ?*

при всѣхъ = *in the presence of all*

это не при чёмъ = *that has nothing to do with it*

онъ здѣсь не при чёмъ = *this doesn't concern him*

по = *after*

потомъ = *then, thereupon*

по чёмъ ? = *at what price are ?* (cf. pp. 163, 170-1)

по чёмъ яблоки ? = *how much are the apples each ?*

по моёмъ пріѣздѣ (ном. пріѣздъ) = *after my arrival*

по его отъѣздѣ (ном. отъѣздъ) = *after his departure*

по нашемъ возвращенію = *after our return*

по чёмъ вы знаете ? = *how do you know ?*

по полудни = *in the afternoon*

## INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

a great deal 11  
about (approximately) 147  
— (concerning) 185–93, 198  
above 182  
abroad 180, 182  
according to 163  
account 170  
acquaintance 80  
across 171  
act 101  
addition (in — to) 185, 198–9  
address 40, 64  
advantageous 156  
affair 46  
after 147, 198–9  
afternoon 147, 181, 199  
afterwards 147, 198  
again 11, 16  
ago 162  
— (long), *v.* long since  
all 57, 65  
all right 7, 17, 155  
alone 56, 69  
along 163  
alongside 147  
already 9, 11 *and passim*  
also 11, 15  
always 10, 16  
ambassador 35  
amiable 75  
amusing 75  
and 10 *and passim*  
and so forth 129  
ancient 78  
angry 22  
animal 80, 131  
annoyed 22  
another 84  
— time 169

any 83, 87  
anyhow (= somehow or other) 13  
any one 86  
anything 86  
any time 13  
anywhere 12  
apple 5, 37, 93, 108  
apple-tree 133  
are, *v.* is  
arm 130  
arm-chair 41  
army 32  
around 147  
arrival 199  
arshin 114–19, 161  
article (newspaper) 32, 100  
artist 101  
as 12  
as much 11  
ass, *v.* donkey  
astonishing 75  
at (table) 181  
at (what price) 163, 170, 198–9  
at (the rate of) 163, 170, 198–9  
at (-o'clock) 119–20, 169, 194  
at (the house of) 142  
at all (not) 11, 18  
at home 15, 16  
attractive 75  
aunt 58  
au revoir 12  
author 101  
automobile, *v.* motor-car  
autumn 47, 180  
autumn (*adj.*) 78  
avenue 40  
awful 76

- bachelor 80  
 back (*adj.*) 74  
 back (*subst.*) 130  
 back(-wards) 162  
 back of head 129  
 bad 75  
 bad (I feel) 155  
 bad (it is) 17, 19  
 bad (for the health) 20  
 baker's 39  
 bank (building) 39  
 bank (shore) 45  
 barley 133  
 barrier 40  
 basin 41  
 bath 41  
 bathing-place 45  
 bath-room 40  
 baths 39  
 be (can it— that ?) 12  
 be (to) 27  
 beans 107  
 bear 132  
 beard 129  
 beast 131  
 beautiful 70, 75  
 because 163  
 bed 41  
 bed (in garden) 133  
 bedding 41, 44  
 bedroom 40  
 bedstead 41  
 be 132  
 beef 106  
 been 28  
 beer 9, 108  
 beetroot 107  
 before 144, 183  
 beginning 45  
 behind 181  
 belfry 39  
 bell (church-) 39  
 bell (house-, room-) 40  
 belt 160  
 bench 41  
 berry 108
- besides 147  
 better (it is) 17, 19, 122,  
 155  
 between 183  
 big 71, 73, 81  
 bigger 73  
 biggest 87  
 bill 45  
 birch-tree 133  
 bird 132  
 biscuits 108  
 bit 109  
 bitter 77  
 black 77  
 blame (to be to) 23  
 blanket 41  
 blind 76  
 blinds 42  
 blood 130  
 blossom 133  
 blotting-paper 42  
 blouse 160  
 blue (dark) 70, 78  
 blue (light) 78  
 boat (rowing-) 45  
 body 8, 129  
 boiled egg 107  
 boiling water 108, 113  
 bone 130  
 book 42  
 boots 159  
 bored 156  
 boring 76  
 both . . . and . . . 10  
 bottle 43  
 boulevard 40  
 box 41  
 boy 6, 36, 61  
 braces 160  
 brandy 109  
 bread 106  
 breakfast, *v.* tea, coffee  
 breeches 159  
 brick 40  
 bridge 40  
 bright 78

## 202 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                          |                              |                        |                   |
|--------------------------|------------------------------|------------------------|-------------------|
| bring me                 | 158, 166                     | cellar                 | 40                |
| broad                    | 74                           | central                | 48                |
| brother                  | 37, 58, 95                   | certain (a)            | 69, 82, 87        |
| brown                    | 77                           | chair                  | 37, 41, 95        |
| brush                    | 161                          | change (coins)         | 44                |
| buckle                   | 160                          | chamber-pot            | 41                |
| buckwheat                | 133                          | charcoal               | 42                |
| bug                      | 133                          | charming               | 75                |
| building                 | 38                           | chauffeur              | 43                |
| business                 | 46                           | cheap                  | 76                |
| but                      | 10, 11, 15 <i>and passim</i> | cheap (it is)          | 24, 26            |
| butter                   | 106                          | cheek                  | 129               |
| button                   | 160                          | cheese                 | 106               |
| by (alongside)           | 147                          | chemist's              | 130               |
| by carriage              | 189                          | cherries               | 108               |
| by means of              | 174                          | chess                  | 101               |
| by name                  | 174                          | chest of drawers       | 41                |
| by (whom, what)          | 179                          | chicken                | 36, 107, 131      |
| cab                      | 43                           | child                  | 4, 33, 36, 58, 59 |
| cabbage                  | 107                          | children               | 38, 58, 59, 96    |
| cabin                    | 45                           | chill                  | 180               |
| café                     | 39                           | chimney                | 39                |
| calf                     | 131                          | chin                   | 129               |
| camel                    | 131                          | chocolate              | 108               |
| can it be that ?         | 12                           | Christian              | 50                |
| candle                   | 36, 42                       | Christian name         | 54                |
| candle-stick             | 42                           | church                 | 33, 38            |
| cane                     | 160                          | cigar                  | 109               |
| cap                      | 160                          | cigarette              | 109               |
| capital                  | 46                           | class                  | 44, 102           |
| car (motor-)             | 32                           | clean                  | 76                |
| cards                    | 101                          | clear                  | 78                |
| carpet                   | 41                           | cloak-room             | 44                |
| carriage                 | 36, 43                       | clock                  | 42                |
| carriage (by)            | 189                          | cloth, <i>v.</i> towel |                   |
| carriage (railway-)      | 44                           | cloth (material)       | 160               |
| carrot                   | 107                          | cloth (table-)         | 41                |
| cart                     | 187                          | clothes                | 160               |
| case, <i>v.</i> incident |                              | cloud                  | 48, 95            |
| cat                      | 131                          | coach-house            | 40                |
| cathedral                | 39                           | coal                   | 42                |
| cauliflower              | 107                          | coarse                 | 77                |
| cause                    | 180                          | coat (fur)             | 159               |
| caviar                   | 106                          | cock                   | 131               |
| ceiling                  | 41                           | cockroach              | 133               |
|                          |                              | coffee                 | 108               |

- |                            |                                       |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| cognac 109                 | cup 42                                |
| cold ( <i>subst.</i> ) 130 | cupboard 41                           |
| cold (it is) 24, 25        | currants 108                          |
| cold (I am) 154            | curtain 42                            |
| cold ( <i>adj.</i> ) 77    | cushion 41                            |
| collar 160                 | custom (habit) 46                     |
| collection 100             | custom-house 2, 38                    |
| colour 37, 95              | cutlet 106                            |
| comb 161                   | <br>                                  |
| come 162                   | damp 77                               |
| comfortable 76             | dangerous ( <i>adj.</i> ) 76          |
| coming ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78  | dangerous (it is) 25, 27              |
| community 48               | dangerously 21                        |
| companion 59               | dark (it is) 24, 25                   |
| company 32                 | dark (colour) 77                      |
| company, <i>v.</i> visitor | dark (complexion) 78                  |
| compartment 44             | darkness 48                           |
| complex 76                 | dates 108                             |
| composition 100            | daughter 33, 58                       |
| concerning 185–93, 198     | dawn 47                               |
| concert 101                | day 8, 35, 46                         |
| concierge 43               | day after to-morrow (the) 30          |
| confectioner's 39          | day before yesterday (the) 121<br>143 |
| consider (I) 163           | day (to-) 10, 16, 30                  |
| consumption 130            | deaf 76                               |
| content(ed) 22             | deal (a great) 11                     |
| continually 57             | dear ( <i>adj.</i> ) 71, 75, 76       |
| convenient 76              | dear (my) 132                         |
| conversation 101           | dear (expensive, it is) 24, 26        |
| cool (it is) 24, 25        | death 131                             |
| cool ( <i>adj.</i> ) 77    | deck 45                               |
| copper 45                  | deep 74                               |
| cork 43                    | deer 132                              |
| corkscrew 43               | degree 130                            |
| corner 41                  | departure 199                         |
| corridor 44                | depressed 156                         |
| costume 159                | desyatín 114–19                       |
| cough 130                  | dictionary 101                        |
| Count 61                   | difficult 76                          |
| Countess 61                | dining-car 44                         |
| country 46                 | dining-room 40, 80                    |
| court-yard 39              | dinner 109                            |
| cover (knife and fork) 43  | direct ( <i>adj.</i> ) 76             |
| cow 131                    | dirty 76                              |
| cream 106, 109             | disagreeable 155                      |
| cucumber 107               |                                       |

## 204 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                               |                                  |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| disgusting 76                 | elbow 130                        |
| dish 43, 80                   | elder 78, 88                     |
| dislike (I — ) 158            | elderly 78                       |
| displeased 22                 | eldest 88                        |
| displeases (it — me) 158      | electric light 42                |
| district 46                   | elephant 131                     |
| do (how do you — ) 12         | elk 132                          |
| doctor 130                    | Emperor (the) 61                 |
| cog 131                       | Empress (the) 61                 |
| done 179                      | empty 74                         |
| donkey 131                    | end 35, 45                       |
| door 40                       | engaged (it is) 25               |
| door (front — ) 6, 39         | enormous 73                      |
| doors (out of) 196            | enough 11, 23                    |
| doubtful (it is — whether) 12 | enough (not) 11                  |
| dough 107                     | envelope 42                      |
| dove 132                      | especial 76                      |
| drawer 41                     | essential 76                     |
| drawers (pants) 159           | establishment 39                 |
| drawing-room 40, 80           | etc. 129                         |
| dress 160                     | even ( <i>adj.</i> ) 74          |
| dress-coat 159                | even ( <i>conj.</i> ) 11         |
| dressing-gown 159             | evening 47                       |
| driving 189                   | evening ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78       |
| drought 133                   | evening clothes 159              |
| dry 77                        | ever (at any time) 195           |
| duck 5, 107                   | every 82, 84, 167                |
| Duchess (Grand) 61            | everything 8                     |
| Duke (Grand) 61               | everywhere 10                    |
| dumb 76                       | excellency 159                   |
| during 169                    | excellent 75                     |
| dust 47                       | except 147                       |
| each 82                       | excuse (me)! 12, 23              |
| eagle 132                     | exists (there) 27                |
| ear 37, 95, 129               | expensive, <i>v.</i> dear        |
| early (it is) 24, 25          | expensive ( <i>adj.</i> ) 71, 76 |
| early ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78      | exquisite 75                     |
| earth 48                      | extra ( <i>adj.</i> ) 76         |
| easier 125                    | eye 35, 37, 93, 95, 129          |
| east(ern) 48                  | face 129                         |
| easy 7, 76                    | factory 39                       |
| edge 187                      | faint 156                        |
| edition 100                   | fair-haired 78                   |
| egg 95, 107                   | faith 101                        |
| either . . . or . . . 10, 14  | far (it is) 25, 26, 128          |

- fare badly 156  
 fat 74  
 father 57, 58  
 fathom 45, 114-19  
 fence 39  
 festival 47  
 fever 130  
 few (a) 11  
 few (a—more) 113  
 few (how) 12  
 few (so) 12  
 few (some) 11  
 fiancé(e) 59  
 field 32, 45  
 figs 108  
 fillet 106  
 fine 75  
 finger 130  
 fir 133  
 fire (flame, light) 35, 42  
 firm 77  
 first 82  
 fish 106, 132  
 flat 39  
 flaxen 78  
 flea 132  
 floor (of room) 6, 8, 41, 187  
 floor (story) 39, 196  
 flower(s) 37, 95, 133  
 flower-bed 133  
 fly 132  
 foal 131  
 fog 48  
 following (the) 74  
 foot 130  
 foot (ft.) 45  
 footwear 160  
 for (*conj.*) 11  
 for (*prep.*) 144  
 for (you) 154  
 forehead 6, 8, 129  
 forest 45  
 forget-me-not 133  
 forgive me 12, 158  
 fork 43  
 former (the) 57  
 former, *v.* first  
 former (previous) 78  
 formerly 13  
 forth (and so) 129  
 fortunate, *v.* happy  
 fowl 107  
 fox 132  
 free (*adj.*) 76  
 free (it is) 25  
 fresh 77  
 friend 37, 59, 95  
 frock-coat 159  
 frog 132  
 from (away from) 145  
 from (out of) 145  
 front (*adj.*) 74  
 front (in—of) 183  
 front door 6, 39  
 frontier 43  
 frost 47  
 fruit 93, 108  
 fuel 42  
 full 74  
 fur(s) 159  
 furniture 41  
 future (*adj.*) 78  
 gallery 39  
 galosh(es) 36, 159  
 game (to eat) 107  
 game (to play) 101  
 garden 133  
 garret 40  
 gate 39  
 gay, *v.* merry  
 general (*adj.*) 76  
 gentleman 60  
 girl (little) 36, 61, 94  
 give me 158, 166  
 glad 21, 22  
 glass (wine-) 43  
 glass (tumbler) 42  
 glasses, *v.* spectacles  
 gloves 160  
 gnat 132  
 goat 131

## 206 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                             |                        |
|-----------------------------|------------------------|
| God 7, 27                   | happy 22, 76           |
| gold 45                     | hard 77                |
| good 71, 75                 | hare 132               |
| good (for the health) 20    | harvest 133            |
| good (it is) 18             | hat 160                |
| good-bye 12                 | have (to) 134          |
| good time (in) 169          | have been 28           |
| goose 107                   | hay 133                |
| gooseberries 108            | he 13, 14, 55          |
| granddaughter 58            | head 129               |
| Grand Duchess 61            | health 130             |
| Grand Duke 61               | healthy 76             |
| grandfather 58              | heart 130              |
| grandmother 58              | heathen 50             |
| grandson 58                 | heating 44             |
| grapes 108                  | heaven 37, 48, 95      |
| grass 133                   | heavy 76               |
| gravy 106                   | heel 130               |
| gray-haired 78              | Heir-Apparent (the) 61 |
| great 73                    | help (me) 158          |
| great deal (a) 11           | hen 131                |
| green 78                    | her 105, 165           |
| green vegetable 107         | here 3, 10             |
| grey 77                     | here is 11, 15         |
| grouse 107                  | herring 132            |
| guard 44                    | herself (56), 68, 96   |
| guest(s), <i>v.</i> visitor | high 71, 74            |
| gulf 46                     | high-road 40           |
| gum 129                     | hill 45                |
| habit (custom) 46           | himself (56), 68, 96   |
| hair 93, 129                | hip 130                |
| hair-pin 160                | his 105                |
| hairdresser's 39            | holdall 161            |
| half 119–20                 | holiday 47             |
| half an hour 119            | home (at) 15, 16       |
| half a rouble 44, 109       | homewards 168          |
| hall 40                     | honey 8, 108           |
| ham 107                     | hope 101               |
| hamlet 46                   | horrid 75              |
| hand 130                    | horrid (it is) 18      |
| hand me 158                 | hors d'œuvre 106       |
| hand-bag 161                | horse 33, 131          |
| handkerchief 160            | horseback 180          |
| handle 42                   | hospital 38            |
| happiness 101               | host 60                |
|                             | hostess 60             |

- |                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| hot ( <i>adj.</i> ) 77              | into 168                       |
| hot (I am) 154                      | iron 45                        |
| hot (it is) 24, 25                  | is 3, 13, 27                   |
| hotel 38, 128, 168                  | island 45                      |
| hound 131                           | it 13, 14, 55                  |
| hour 47, 114-19                     | itself (56), 68, 96            |
| hour (at what) 169                  |                                |
| house 8, 35, 39, 168                | jacket 159, 160                |
| house (at the—of) 142               | jam 107                        |
| how 12                              | joint 106                      |
| how do you do 12                    | judge 33                       |
| how few 12                          | jug 41                         |
| how little, <i>v.</i> what a little |                                |
| how many 11                         | key 5, 36, 44, 94              |
| how much 11, 198-9                  | kid 131                        |
| how old 161                         | killed 179                     |
| however 11                          | kind ( <i>adj.</i> ) 75        |
| huge 73                             | kind ( <i>subst.</i> ) 108     |
| hurry up! 128                       | kind (of such a) 102           |
| hurts (it) 156                      | kind (what, every) 82, 87      |
| husband 7, 59                       | kind (no, some) 83             |
| hut (peasant's) 32                  | king 61                        |
| <br>                                | kitchen 40                     |
| I 16, 55                            | kitchen garden 133             |
| ice 8,                              | kitten 131                     |
| ice-cream 80, 108                   | knee 3, 37, 93, 130            |
| ill 21                              | knife 36, 43, 94               |
| illness 130                         | kopek 44, 114-19, 163, 170-1   |
| immediately 166                     | kvas 109                       |
| impossible (it is) 12, 155          |                                |
| in 185-95                           | lad 61                         |
| in (addition to) 185, 198-9         | lady 60                        |
| in (the possession of) 134-44       | lake 5, 45                     |
| in (the presence of) 185, 198-9     | lamb 131                       |
| in (the time of) 185, 198-9         | lamp 42                        |
| in front of 183                     | lamp-shade 42                  |
| in good time 169                    | land, <i>v.</i> earth, country |
| incident 46                         | landing-stage 45, 128          |
| inconvenient 76                     | language 101, 125              |
| indispensable 144                   | lantern 42                     |
| inflammation 130                    | large 71, 73                   |
| ink 42                              | larger 73                      |
| ink-stand 42                        | largest 87                     |
| insect 80, 132                      | last (the) 74                  |
| instead of 147                      | last ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78        |
| interesting 75                      | late (it is) 24, 25            |

## 208 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                                    |                                       |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| late ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78            | long ago, <i>v.</i> long since        |
| lately 10, 17                      | long since 10, 17                     |
| latter ( <i>the</i> ) 57           | longer (no) 11                        |
| latter, <i>v.</i> last             | look well, ill 136-7                  |
| laundry, <i>v.</i> wash            | lot (a) 11                            |
| law 101                            | lot (such a) 12                       |
| lay 170                            | lot (what a) 12                       |
| left ( <i>adj.</i> ) 74            | love 101                              |
| left ( <i>to the, on the</i> ) 10  | low 74                                |
| leg 130                            | lower 74                              |
| lemon 108                          | luck (with) 13                        |
| lesson 101                         | lucky, <i>v.</i> happy                |
| letter 46                          | luggage 44, 112                       |
| library 40                         | lumber-room 40                        |
| lid 43                             | lunch 109                             |
| life 9, 131                        | lungs 130                             |
| light (it is) 24, 25               | Madam 61                              |
| light (colour) 77                  | magazine 100                          |
| light (weight) 76                  | magnificent 75                        |
| light (the) 48                     | maid 60, 80                           |
| light (artificial) 42              | maize 133                             |
| lighting 44                        | malicious 75                          |
| like (I —) 158                     | man 33, 61, 62                        |
| likewise 11                        | many (how) 11, 112                    |
| lilac ( <i>subst.</i> ) 133        | many 11, 112                          |
| lilac 78                           | many thanks 154                       |
| linen 160                          | market 39                             |
| lining 160                         | marvel 37, 95                         |
| link(s) 160                        | marvellous 75                         |
| lion 104, 132                      | many ( <i>so</i> ), <i>v.</i> so much |
| lip 129                            | married (woman) 181-2                 |
| literature 101                     | married (man) 197                     |
| little 74, 81-2                    | master 60                             |
| little (a) 11                      | match 42                              |
| little (a — more) 113              | matter (what is the) 184, 193         |
| little (but) 11                    | mattress 41                           |
| little (such a) 12                 | mauve 78                              |
| little (too), <i>v.</i> not enough | may I ? 155                           |
| little (what a) 12                 | may (one) 12                          |
| loaf 106                           | mayn't (one) 12, 155                  |
| lobby 40                           | meadow 7, 45, 187                     |
| local 74                           | means 44                              |
| locality 67                        | means ( <i>by — of</i> ) 174          |
| long 74                            | meat 106                              |
| long (a — way), <i>v.</i> far      | medicine 130                          |
| long (not), <i>v.</i> lately       |                                       |

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| melon 108<br>merry 75<br>middle 45<br>middle ( <i>adj.</i> ) 74<br>milk 5, 109<br>mill (water-) 39<br>millet 133<br>minute 47, 114–20<br>mirror 41<br>miserable 75<br>Miss, Mr., Mrs., Messrs. 60<br>mistress 60<br>money 36, 44, 95<br>moneychanger's 44<br>monkey 132<br>month 46<br>moon 46, 48<br>more (ещё) 9, 11, 112<br>morning 47<br>morning (good), <i>v.</i> how do you do<br>morning ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78<br>mosquito 132<br>most (the) 87<br>mother 2, 33, 57, 58<br>motor-car 32, 43<br>mountain 45<br>moustache 129<br>mouth 8, 129<br>much 11<br>much ( <i>followed by a comparative,</i><br><i>e. g. better, worse</i> ) 18<br>much (as) 11<br>much (how) 11<br>much (so) 11<br>much (too) 11<br>mud 47<br>museum 39<br>mushroom 107<br>music 101<br>must 23<br>must (one) 12<br>mustard 106<br>mustn't (one) 12<br>mutton 106<br>my 4, 55, 62<br>myself (56), 68, 96 | nail 130<br>name (by —) 174<br>napkin 43<br>narrow 74<br>nasty 75<br>near (it is) 25, 26, 128<br>near ( <i>prep.</i> ) 142, 147<br>nearly 11<br>necessary (it is) 12, 111<br>neck 129<br>necktie 160<br>need (I) 157<br>needle 160<br>neighbour 37, 95<br>neither . . . nor . . . 10, 14<br>nest 3, 132<br>never 10<br>new 78<br>newest 87<br>newspaper 3, 100<br>newspaper article 32, 100<br>next (the) 74, 78<br>nice 71, 75<br>nice (it is) 17, 18<br>nice (to taste) 24, 26<br>night 46<br>nightingale 132<br>no 10, 13, 28<br>no longer 11, 110<br>no one 111<br>nor 10, 14<br>north(ern) 48<br>nose 8, 129<br>not 10, 13, 27 <i>and passim</i><br>not at all 11<br>not enough 11<br>not in the least, <i>v.</i> not at all<br>not long, <i>v.</i> lately<br>not much, <i>v.</i> some<br>not nice (it is) 17<br>not nice (to taste) 24, 26<br>not quite 11, 21<br>not really ?, <i>v.</i> can it be that ?<br>not very 11<br>not yet 11<br>not (there is) 10, 27, 91 |
|---|--|

## 210 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |  |                            |
|--|----------------------------|
| note (money) 44                          | pain 130                   |
| note-book 42                             | painter 101                |
| nothing 111                              | painting 101               |
| novel 100                                | palace 39                  |
| now 10, 11, 15, 16, 25 <i>and passim</i> | pale 78                    |
| nowhere 10                               | pants 159                  |
| number (on anything) 45                  | paper 42                   |
| nursery 40, 80                           | parents 58                 |
| nursing-home 130                         | pass (me) 158              |
| <br>                                     | passport 43                |
| oak 133                                  | past ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78    |
| oats 133                                 | pastry 107                 |
| occupied (it is) 25                      | path 133                   |
| o'clock (at —) 119–20, 169, 194          | patronymic 54              |
| office 44                                | pavement 40                |
| official 43                              | peace 4, 101               |
| oil 106                                  | peaches 108                |
| old 78                                   | pear 108                   |
| oldest 87                                | peasant (man) 36, 62       |
| old-fashioned 78                         | peasant (woman) 32, 62     |
| old (how) 161                            | peasant's hut 32           |
| old man 61                               | pen 42                     |
| old woman 61                             | pencil 42                  |
| omelet 107                               | penholder 42               |
| one 56, 69, 145                          | people 38, 96              |
| one's own 56, (105)                      | people (the, a) 46         |
| onion 107                                | pepper 106                 |
| only 11, 56                              | performance 101            |
| on 163, 168, 185–93, 196–7               | permit me 158              |
| on to 170                                | person 129                 |
| once 83                                  | piano 101                  |
| open (it is) 25, 26                      | picture 101                |
| open country 45                          | pie 106, 107               |
| opinion 101, 163                         | piece 109                  |
| or 10, 14 <i>and passim</i>              | piece of luggage 67, 112   |
| orange 108                               | pig 131                    |
| orphan 139                               | pigeon 132                 |
| orthodox 50                              | pillow 41                  |
| other 82                                 | pillow-case 41             |
| our 55, 63                               | pin 160                    |
| ourselves (56), 68, 96                   | pink ( <i>subst.</i> ) 133 |
| out of doors 196                         | pipe 109                   |
| overcoat 159                             | place 32, 46               |
| own ( <i>adj.</i> ) 56, 137–8            | plain (clear) 78           |
| ox 131                                   | plant 133                  |
|  | plate 43                   |

- |                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| platform 44                       | quiet 77                        |
| play 101                          | quilt 41                        |
| pleasant 75                       | quite 11, 21                    |
| please 12                         | quite (not) 11, 21              |
| pleased 22                        |                                 |
| pleases (it — me) 158             |                                 |
| pleasure 101                      | rabbit 132                      |
| plum 108                          | radish 107                      |
| pocket 161                        | railway 44                      |
| pocket-book 161                   | railway-carriage 44             |
| poem 101                          | rain 8, 47                      |
| police (man) 43                   | ram 131                         |
| police-court 43                   | rapid 77                        |
| poor 75, 76                       | rare 74                         |
| poplar 133                        | raspberries 108                 |
| poppy 133                         | rather more, rather less 128    |
| pork 107                          | raw 77                          |
| porter 43                         | razor 161                       |
| portrait 41                       | ready 23                        |
| possible (it is) 12               | ready ( <i>adj.</i> ) 76        |
| post-card 42, 171                 | really 11, 25, 26               |
| post-office 39                    | reaping 133                     |
| potato 107                        | receipt 44                      |
| pound (lb.) 45, 114–19            | red 78                          |
| presence (in the — of) 185, 198–9 | red-haired 78                   |
| present ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78        | refreshment-room 38             |
| pretty 75                         | region 46                       |
| previous (the) 78                 | regret 101                      |
| price 45                          | require (I) 157                 |
| priest 60                         | restaurant 38                   |
| priest's wife 60                  | return 199                      |
| Prince 61                         | rich 76                         |
| Princess 61                       | rifle 32                        |
| profitable 156                    | right ( <i>adj.</i> ) 74        |
| property (land) 9, 32, 46         | right (all) 7, 17               |
| province 46                       | right (to be) 23                |
| pud 45, 114–19                    | right (to the, on the) 10       |
| pupil 60                          | ring 161                        |
| puppy 131                         | ripe 77                         |
| purse 161                         | river 45                        |
| put 170                           | road 44                         |
|                                   | roast beef 106                  |
| quarter 119–20                    | Roman Catholic 50               |
| quay 40                           | room (a) 32, 40                 |
| queen 61                          | room (= place), <i>v.</i> place |
| quick 77                          | rose 133                        |
|                                   | rouble 44, 80, 114–19           |

## 212 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| rough 77                         | shore 35, 45                            |
| round 74                         | short 74                                |
| rowing-boat 45                   | short ( <i>a — way</i> ) <i>v.</i> near |
| rows (covered) 39                | should be 29                            |
| rude 77                          | should have been 29                     |
| rug 161                          | shoulder(s) 37, 93, 130                 |
| rye 133                          | show me 158, 166                        |
| <br>                             | shrine 39                               |
| sable 132                        | shut ( <i>it is</i> ) 25, 26            |
| sad 76                           | sick 76, 156                            |
| safe ( <i>it is</i> ) 25, 27     | side 46, 187                            |
| safety pin 160                   | sideboard 41                            |
| said 179                         | silver 45                               |
| salmon 132                       | simple 76                               |
| salt 5, 6, 8, 106                | Sir 61                                  |
| same ( <i>the</i> ) 88           | sister 58                               |
| sash 160                         | skin 129                                |
| satisfied 22                     | skirt 160                               |
| sauce 106                        | sky 8, 37, 48, 95                       |
| saucer 42                        | sledge 43                               |
| sausage 107                      | sleeping-car 44                         |
| school 39                        | sleeve(s) 160                           |
| scissors 160                     | slippers 159                            |
| scrambled eggs 107               | slow 77                                 |
| screen 42                        | slower! 128                             |
| sea 5, 45                        | slush 8, 47                             |
| seat ( <i>in train etc.</i> ) 67 | small change 44                         |
| second 82                        | small 73, 81-2                          |
| see ( <i>come and</i> ) 162      | smaller 74                              |
| self 56, 68, 96                  | smallest 87                             |
| sentry 80                        | smooth 77                               |
| serious 23                       | snake 132                               |
| seriously 21                     | snow 47                                 |
| servant 60                       | so 12                                   |
| shall be 30                      | so few 12                               |
| shallow 74                       | so little, <i>v.</i> such a little      |
| shawl 161                        | so many, <i>v.</i> so much              |
| she 13, 14, 55                   | so much 11, 12                          |
| sheaf 133                        | soap 41                                 |
| sheep 8, 131                     | society 32                              |
| sheet 41                         | socks 159                               |
| sheet ( <i>of paper</i> ) 42     | soda-water 113                          |
| shelf 41                         | sofa 41                                 |
| shirt 159                        | soft 77                                 |
| shop 32, 39                      | soldier 93                              |
| shoes 159                        | sole ( <i>of foot</i> ) 130             |

some 11, 56, 69, 82, 83, 87, 112,	steppe 45
113	stewed fruit 107
somewhat 13	stick 160
somewhat or other 13	still ( <i>conj.</i> ) 9, 11
some one 86	stockings 159
something 86	stomach 130
some time 13	stone 40
some time or other 13	store-room 40, 80
sometimes 10	stork 132
somewhere 12	story (floor) 39
somewhere or other 12	story (of house) 3, 39, 196
son 37, 58, 95	story, <i>v.</i> tale
song 101	straight 76
sorry (I am) 166	strap 161
sort (what, every) 82, 87	strawberries 108
sort (no, some) 83	street 40, 196
sort ( <i>subst.</i> ) 108	string 42
sort of 13	stroke (a) 7
soul 129	strong 76, 77
soup 106	stud 160
sour 77	study 40
south(ern) 48	subject (of a state) 80
Sovereign (the) 61	such 83, 86
sparrow 132	such a little 12
sparse 74	such a lot 12
spectacles 161	such as 13
spinster 61	sugar 90, 108
spirit 129	suit 159
sponge 41	summer 47
spoon 43	summer ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78
spring (season) 47	sun 48
spring ( <i>adj.</i> ) 78	superfluous 76
square 40	supper 9, 109
square ( <i>adj.</i> ) 74	surely ? 12
squirrel 132	surely not ? 12
stables 39	surname 54
stage 101	surprise 101
stairs 40	swallow 132
stamp(s) 42, 163, 170	sweet 77
star 48	sweet(s) 93, 107, 108
starch 160	swift 77
station 38, 128, 170	sympathetic 75
steak 106	
steamer 45	table 32, 41
steed 8, 131	table (at) 181
steel 45	table-cloth 41

## 214 INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

- |                                 |                              |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------|
| tailor's 39                     | ticket 32, 43                |
| take 154                        | ticket-office 44             |
| tale 100                        | tie 160                      |
| tall 71, 74                     | tiger 132                    |
| taxi 44                         | till 144                     |
| tea 90, 109, 112                | time 9, 33, 46               |
| tea-pot 42                      | time (a) 7, 46, 93, 112, 169 |
| tea-urn 42                      | time (at that) 169           |
| teacher 60                      | time (in the—of) 185, 198–9  |
| tedious 76                      | time (a long) 17             |
| telegram 46                     | time (in good) 169           |
| telegraph-office 46             | tip 43                       |
| telephone 46                    | to 162, 167                  |
| tell me 158                     | to-day 10, 16, 30            |
| temperature 130                 | to-morrow 30                 |
| terminus 38                     | tobacco 90, 109              |
| terrible 76                     | toe 130                      |
| than 18, 19                     | toilet 44                    |
| thank you 12, 166, 170          | tomato 107                   |
| thanks 154                      | tongue 107, 129              |
| that (those) 13, 14, 57         | too 11, 25, 26               |
| thaw 47                         | too little 11                |
| theatre 38                      | too much 11                  |
| their 105                       | tooth 129                    |
| themselves (56), 68, 96         | top (on the) 187             |
| then 10, 198–9                  | total (sum) 45               |
| there 10, 14 <i>and passim</i>  | towel 41                     |
| there are, <i>v.</i> there is   | tower 39                     |
| there is (вотъ) 11, 15          | town 35, 46                  |
| there is not 10, 27, 91         | train 44                     |
| there is (есть) 27              | tram 44                      |
| thereupon 198–9                 | tray 170                     |
| thermometer 130                 | tree 37, 95, 133             |
| they 13, 14, 55                 | trousers 159                 |
| thick 74                        | trunk 161                    |
| thin 74                         | Tsar (the) 61                |
| thing 33, 44                    | Tsaritsa (the) 61            |
| third 82                        | tsar 2, 60                   |
| this (these) 3, 13, 57, 65, 167 | tsarevich 60                 |
| thou 16, 17, 55                 | tsaritsa 60                  |
| thread 160                      | tsesarevich 60               |
| throat 129                      | tub (bath) 41                |
| through 171                     | tumbler 42                   |
| thus 12                         | tumbler-stand 42             |
| thy 55, 63                      | turkey-hen 107               |
| thyselv (56), 68, 96            | turnip 107                   |

- |                                    |                               |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ugly 75                            | waiting-room 40               |
| umbrella 160                       | wall 41                       |
| uncle 58                           | walnut 108                    |
| uncomfortable 76                   | want (I) 156-7                |
| under 182                          | war 101                       |
| undervest 159                      | warm (it is) 24, 25           |
| unfortunate 22                     | warm (I am) 154               |
| unhappiness 101                    | warm ( <i>adj.</i> ) 77       |
| unhappy 22, 76                     | was 4, 28                     |
| uninteresting 76                   | wash (the) 160                |
| university 39                      | wash-stand 41                 |
| unjust (it is) 18                  | wasp 132                      |
| unlucky 22                         | watch (clock) 42              |
| unnecessary (it is) 12             | water 27, 108, 113            |
| unpleasant ( <i>adj.</i> ) 75, 155 | water-bottle 43               |
| unpleasant (it is) 18              | water-melon 108               |
| until 144                          | waterproof 160                |
| unusual 76                         | way ( <i>subst.</i> ) 44, 174 |
| unwell 20                          | way (a long), <i>v.</i> far   |
| up to 144                          | way (a short), <i>v.</i> near |
| upper 74                           | W.C. 40                       |
| usual 76                           | we 16, 55                     |
| vacant (it is) 25                  | weather 47                    |
| veal 106                           | week 32, 46                   |
| vegetable 107                      | weight 45                     |
| vegetable-bed 133                  | well! 10                      |
| verst 45, 114-19                   | well (far from) 21            |
| very 11, 18                        | well (in health) 20           |
| very well 18                       | well (very) 18, 154           |
| very (the) 83                      | were 28                       |
| vessel (ship) 37, 95               | west(ern) 48                  |
| vest 159                           | wet 77                        |
| vestibule 40                       | what 13, 56, 82, 84, 86       |
| via 171                            | what a little 12              |
| view 46                            | what a lot 12                 |
| villa 39                           | what like 82, 87              |
| village 32, 46                     | wheat 133                     |
| vinegar 106                        | wheel 44                      |
| violet ( <i>subst.</i> ) 133       | when 10                       |
| visitor(s) 142                     | where 7, 10 <i>and passim</i> |
| vodka 108                          | which 82, 84                  |
| volume 8, 100                      | whiskers 129                  |
| wagon, <i>v.</i> cart              | white 78                      |
| waistcoat 159                      | who 7, 13, 56                 |
|                                    | whole (the) 57, 65            |
|                                    | whose 56, 67                  |

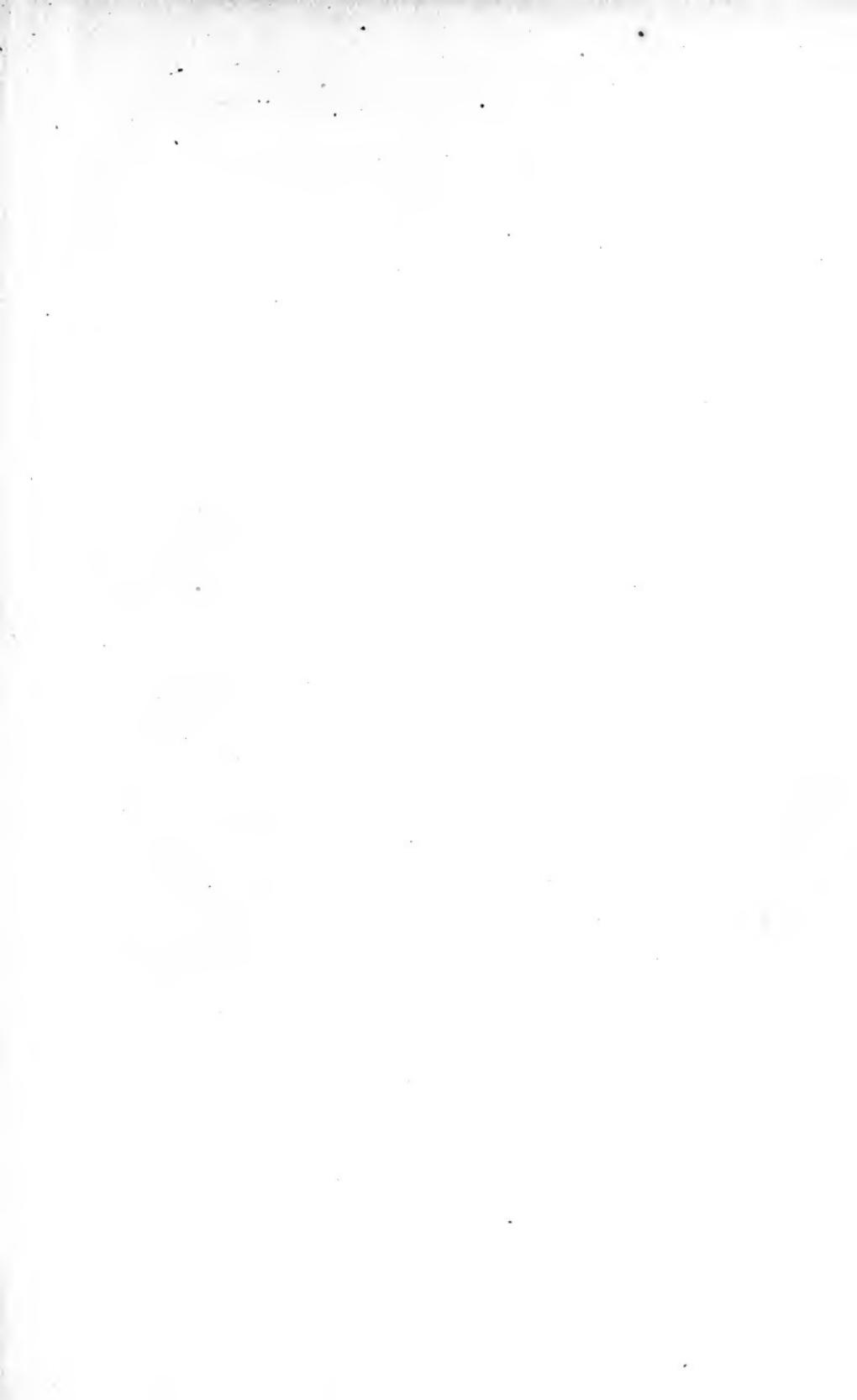
why, 144, 163  
 wicked 75  
 wife 59  
 will be 30  
 wind 47  
 window 41, 95  
 wine 108  
 wine-glass 43  
 winter 47  
 winter (*adj.*) 78  
 with 184  
 without 144  
 wolf 132  
 woman (peasant) 32, 62  
 woman 61-2  
 wood, *v.* tree  
 wood (forest) 45  
 wood fuel 42  
 wool 161  
 word 101  
 work 46  
 work (literary) 100  
 world 4, 48  
 worse (it is) 18, 19, 122, 155  
 worthless 75  
 would be 29

would have been 29  
 wrist 130  
 writer 101  
 writing-paper 42  
 writing-table 41  
 written 179  
 wrong (it is unjust) 18  
 wrong (to be) 23  
 yard (measure) 93, 161  
 yard (court-) 39  
 year 7, 46, 47, 114-19  
 yellow 78  
 yes 10, 13, 28  
 yesterday 30  
 yet 9, 11 *and passim*  
 yet (not) 11  
 yonder (that—) 57  
 you 16, 17, 55  
 young 70, 78  
 younger 78, 88  
 youngest 88  
 young lady 60  
 your 56, 62  
 yourselves (56), 68, 96

## SUBJECT-INDEX

age (expression of) 161  
 authors (names of) 80, 104  
 countries (names of) 49, 167-8  
 date (the) 121-2  
 days of the week (the) 47, 84,  
     163, 168  
 food and drink (portions of)  
     112-13, 115, 119, 126-7, 184  
 meals 109, 169, 184  
 money (expression of money-  
     values) 44, 80, 109, 111, 114-  
     19, 163  
 months (names of the) 47, 121  
 names (family) 54, 80, 104, 124

names (personal, use of) 54  
 names (personal) 33, 52, 80, 104,  
     125, 126  
 nationalities 49, 79, 181-2, 197  
 numerals 69, 82, 114-22, 161  
 personal names (use of) 54  
 price (expression of) 163, 170,  
     198-9  
 rivers (names of) 51, 196  
 seasons (the) 47, 167, 180  
 time of day 119-20, (cf. 167),  
     169, 180-1  
 times (of the year), *v.* seasons  
 towns (names of) 51, 196



UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY  
BERKELEY

Return to desk from which borrowed.

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

3 Aug 49 EW	RECD LD	FEB 08 '94
10 Nov '50 CS	OCT 12 1960	
13 May 54 VL	19 Jan '61 RT	
APR 29 1954 LU	RECD LD	
25 Feb '58 J N	JAN 18 1961	
RECD LD	12 Aug '63 SE	
FEB 25 1958	SMITH	
17 Nov 59 AR	NOV 4 1959 RECD '63	
RECD LD	AUG 27 1963	
NOV 4 1959 RECD '63		
26 Oct 60 TD		

LD 21-100m-9, '48 (B399s16) 476

YB 60294

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C043104549

327991

835

F697

Forbes

b

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

